

Prologue

"Cuanto(how much?)"

"100 pesos"

"Dale, vamos(ok, let's go) he opens the door for me to get in and We drive to motel quentes. He is my fourth customer for the night.

I've been in Mexico for the past four years now. Antonio my pimp bought me back home in south Africa. You probably think I'm some naive model who got tricked into thinking that they are getting a modeling contract only to end up being shipped to Mexico right? Well you would be well within your rights to assume that. Why else would an educated psychologist like myself

be selling her body on the streets of st Maria calling herself Lupita Santos, sigh!

Four years ago I was working at Sandton clinic as the resident clinical psychologist, married to the most loving man in the world Tshepo Moletsane and gave birth to the sweetest little boy Kgatliso. My life was picture perfect because I worked damn hard for it. I was raised by a single father who did everything humanly possible to provide the best he could for my brother and I, I worked hard at school, stayed away from boys until I finished my matric on record time at the age of 16. I

met Tshepo at UJ while he was doing his last year in BCOM accounting. We fell in love and he proposed on my graduation day. I was that type that went to bed with a smile on my face and woke up with joy in my heart. I made breakfast humming every morning and when I walked into the corridors of Sandton clinic I always had a bounce to my step, that's how jovial I was. So how did I end up here you wonder? I ask myself that question over and over again right after I wonder how my husband and my son are.

Chapter 1

**TSHEPO** 

He is now 4 years and 6 months old.

When his mother disappeared he was only 6 months old, if it wasn't for Boitumelo I don't know where we would

be. That woman had been our source of strength when all was too much to handle. The constant interviews pleading to the public to help us find my wife, the wild goose chase people would send us on. It was all too much. I'm in my office admiring the ring that I bought for Tumi, over the past two years I have fallen in love with her, the way she loves and takes care of Kgatliso is just beautiful to witness. I spoke to my family about marrying her and they are very supportive. We started dating a little over

a year ago after much persuasion on my part. Her fear has always been, what happens if Bree comes back and my answer has always been the same, I will always love Bree but I have fallen in love with Tumi and I will never leave her.

"Are you seriously going through with it, what if Bree comes back" that's my older brother Kopano

"Four years is a long time, Moletsane. I looked everywhere. Do you think it's easy

for me to just be on pause not knowing whether I'm coming or going? I'm literally stuck in the same spot and I can't do it anymore, I can't move around in circles anymore, this is me taking my life and my son's life back. Tumi is the only mother my son knows, I have woken that woman up at 1am and she would come running to my son's aid. Wherever Bree is, I'm sure she'll be happy that I chose her best friend to be a mother to our son" he nods and pulls up a chair sitting down

"Are you calling off the search?" I nod

"I've wasted too much money, almost went bankrupt. God himself knows that I did everything in my power" we fall into silence

"How are you holding up after Sne" he chuckles

"For months after her death I used to wish to be you" I frown and he chuckles

"I saw Sne die right in front of my eyes. I held her hand as she took her last breath. I will never see her again, I envied you because there's still a chance she could walk through the door and you would see her face again" I smile thinking about Bree. She was a very strong willed woman, very driven, and very humble as well. I waited 3 years before she gave me her innocence but she was worth the wait. When she agreed to be my wife man I felt like I won the lottery, Bree is not one of those ridiculously beautiful

women but her beauty creeps in on you, it is subtle and when you finally notice her beauty, you can't help but get lost in it. I would wake up in the middle of the night and just watch her sleep and wonder what the hell did I do right to deserve that woman. Just like the seasons in a year, life changes and in a split second everything just turned upside down, I still blame myself to this day. I was the one who forced her to go to the club and celebrate Tumi's birthday "you are always in the house, you go and I'll look after

Kgatliso" I said she was skeptical and busy kissing our son "are you sure baby? Maybe I can make it up to Tumi by taking her out on a spa date next week, you know I don't like clubs" she argued "Tumi would be very disappointed, you are her best friend besides she booked the whole place so it won't be your typical night at the club vibe" she nods and perks my lips before kissing kgatli's forehead "I love you" she said running off and that was the last time I saw my Bree. A lone tear escapes my eye

"I'm sorry for opening old wounds" I shake my head

"It's okay, it's time I close this chapter of my life" he nods with pity written all over his.

I drive home it's just after 6 pm, I passed by the flower shop to get Tumi some flowers. I hope she says yes. "Honey I'm home!" I shout as soon as I get in. But there's no response. I walk upstairs and I hear two voices talking and I stand by the door frame listening

"So Lebo wants to be Kyle's girlfriend but I want Lebo to be my girlfriend"

"If Lebo doesn't want to be your girlfriend then let her go to Kyle it's her loss. She

will regret it when another girl wants to be your girlfriend okay" he giggles

"Thank you mommy" that warms my heart

"Good evening my people" I say opening the door wide still holding the flowers

"Daddy!" He comes running to me

"Are those for me Tumi says looking at the flowers" I shake my head "Nope these are for Kgatli" handing the huge bouquet to Kgatli. I walk over to her and kiss her passionately. I break the kiss, fish out the ring in pocket and open it. I watch as her eyes glitter with tears

"You have been my rock, my shoulder to cry on and my source of strength through everything without asking for anything in return. I know you are scared of the unknown and the what if's but I ask that you trust me because I will not disappoint

you. I promise to love you even when everything's a mess. Will you make me the happiest man on this earth and marry me?" She nods crying, I slid the ring into her finger.

"Mommy why are you crying?" She giggles through her tears

"Because I'm happy, baby mommy is very happy"

**CHAPTER 2** 

## **BOITUMELO MASILO**

I keep admiring the beautiful single diamond ring that I'm wearing. I can't

believe that he finally proposed and it took him four long years, wow! but it has finally happened. Patience is truly a virtue. He is in the shower now after a steamy session we just had. I'm laying in bed naked, God is good in deed. My phone rings and it's mommy dearest

PHONE CONVO

"Your timing is perfect" she giggles

"Is that how you greet your mother?"

"He finally popped the question" she squills

"I knew it, he came by a couple of days ago and asked your father to stop the investigation. I knew right there and then that he is ready to move on" I wipe my tears

"It's been a long time coming. Bree is gone, we searched everywhere for her.

She disappeared into thin air" she sighs

"What if she comes back Tumi?"

"Tshepo assured me that there's nothing to worry about. She must stay wherever she is because Kgatli and Tshepo are mine now." We talk some more before hanging up.

"So when do you think I can start planning for the wedding?" He kisses my cheek

"As soon as possible, I want to make you my wife as in yesterday." Oh my gosh! I don't believe this is finally happening.

"Do you think she will come back?" His body stiffens up

"You just had to ruin the moment didn't you?" I sigh

"I'm sorry" he kisses my forehead

"Let's just forget about everything and focus on our love, our little family okay? Plan the wedding, go wild because the budget is unlimited, just don't ask for my input"

This has a bitter sweet feeling about it. 5 years ago I was the maid of honour for Bree and Tshepo's wedding and now I'm going to be the bride marrying the same groom. The judgment I'm going to receive from her family, her father and her brother. I don't care though, I will stand it all. I love this man and I'm not going anywhere.

I spot Shelly and Nosipho at the corner table. We are meeting for lunch, it's our monthly ritual if you can call it that. The four of us were friends, Bree included but I was the best friend to Bree. Shelly is a high school teacher, Nosipho is a pastor's wife and a motivational speaker, she studied psychology with Bree. Me? Well I'm an aspiring house wife and I own an online clothing business.

"Ladies" I say settling down on the chair, they mumble a greeting at the same time

"Now that Tumi is here, ladies we need to talk about our next trip" I scratch my head looking down. Every year for the past 3 years we travel to a different countries in the continent to hand out flyers of missing persons, with Bree's face plastered on the flyer. We call it operations bring our Bree home.

"Ladies come on, we promised eachother that we will do this every year until we find Bree." Nosipho says. I clear my throat

"Tshepo and I are engaged"

"Wow!" Shelly says and Nosi just keeps quiet.

"Is that all you are going to say, and you Nosi, aren't you going to say anything?"

"I don't know what you want us to say
Tumi. I'm talking about finding our friend
and you are talking about replacing her"
Shelly says sounding angry

"Replacing her? That's absurd, it's been 4 years guys. Tshepo loves me Kgatli loves me. Bree was....."

"Was? Bree is not dead, stop talking about her like she's no more. If you want to play happy family with her husband

and son then go right ahead but leave me out of it" Shelly says getting up and throwing a few notes on the table before leaving Nosi and I in awkward silence.

"Does Kgatli know about his mother" I scoff

"I am that boy's mother, how do we explain to him that his mother disappeared? I raised him. He calls me mommy and that's the end of it" she shakes her head.

"I'm going to pray for God to give you wisdom because my friend you are really losing the plot. You can never replace Bree both as a mother and a wife. Shelly and I will be going on our annual trip with or without you" she takes her bag and leaves too. I guess I need new friends to help plan my wedding.

The

**BREE** 

"Ola Lupita"

"Ola Antonio" he licks his lips much to my irritation. Antonio is a hardless typical mexican. He and his brother run underground clubs, brothels and the biggest prostitution ring in the whole of Mexico. Upon arrival, you are branded like an animal with hot steel rod with the

letter s shaped showing that you belong to the Santos brothers.

"The boss of the Mexican cartel seems to be infatuated by your African ass and he asked for you to accompany him to the annual fiesta bowl at new Mexico in America" I fake a smile but inside I am jumping up and down. This is the opportunity I have been waiting for.

"No intestes nada estupida señora (don't try anything stupid)"

"Si (yes)" I have seen many try to escape and they ended up dead. I have never tried to escape before, not because I like being here no! I never tried to escape because there is no way out. Antonio runs the whole of Mexico. People fear him and his brother Petro, there was a girl named Nnena from Nigeria, she tried to run, she even made it to the immigration offices but they brought her back to Antonio.

That night we couldn't sleep, all we heard was her screaming. The next day Antonio had a cookout, burger and fries were on the menu. We ate so much that day because we hardly ever had fancy food. I stopped eating meat that very same day when we were told that we ate Nnena's flesh. We all vomited but it was too late. We ingested our poor fellow prostitute.

"Ramos will take you shopping, I want you to look your best and take the rest of the day off" I nod and he leaves, I breathe in relieved. At least I won't be working tonight and one thing is for certain, when I leave tomorrow I am not coming back to this place. I would rather die than come back to this life ever again, this is my chance and I'm going to take it.

"I heard you are going to new Mexico tomorrow?" That's Sofia, one of the prostitutes I found here who took me under her wing and taught me everything I need to know to survive longer in this

life. She had been working for the Santos brothers since she was 15 years old. She is 40 years old now. She's not making much money as a street prostitute anymore so they use her for filming porno movies. She has taught me how to avoid being addicted to the drugs they feed you when you resist. I don't resist, no matter how inhumane customers can get.

"Si"

"Correr (run)" I nod

"I am not coming back here Sofia, no matter what I'm not coming back" she tears up

"You are not like us Lupita, you are educated and smart. I see them books you read at night when everyone is asleep. I also read your journal migo I'm so sorry I invaded your privacy but you

are good. You need to leave this place and tell our story." I nod wiping her tears.

"Take this, it will guide you in your time if need" she gives me a necklace with the cross of Christ.

## **TSHEPO**

I park my car outside her home and take a deep breath before getting out. I have

been dreading coming here for a long time. Kgatli has been here twice after Bree's disappearance, the last time he was here he was only a year old.

"Dumelang" I greet as I walk into the dining room. Ntate Modiri is reading a newspaper. He takes off his glasses and focuses on Kgatli. I see a tear drop although he tries to wipe it quickly.

"Moletsane" I look down playing with my beard

"I'm sorry I haven't been coming around, it has been very difficult I almost went bankrupt looking for Bree everywhere."

He folds his newspaper

"I see you and hear rumours of you dropping off the Masilo girl which is just two streets away from here. Is it because my son and I are struggling financially, that you never allow my grandson to come visit?" I clear my throat

"Boy go sit there and play games with daddy's phone" he nods scurrying off.

"Ntate Modiri, we have all been dealt a raw deal. Bree's disappearance took its toll on all of us. I had to do what's best for my son and that is for him to grow up in a stable home with a mother and a father. Who must I say you are to him? I don't want to confuse him. I am moving on with my life and I would very much appreciate it if you and your son stay

away from Kgatli. I promise to raise him well. Just like I have been doing for the past 4 years" he chuckles

"Let me guess, you are moving on with Bree's childhood friend who always sulked when Bree got a better toy than hers, the same friend who tried to commit suicide because Bree passed her matric with 6 distinctions while she only passed with HC. The very same friend who threw a party at the Club with lots

of female guests but only my daughter got abducted that fateful night." I frown

"What are you insinuating? Tumi loved Bree and she was just as broken, her father went over and beyond the call of duty to look for Bree. I don't understand why you are hating on Tumi when she has been a mother to Kgatli, she put her business on hold attending all of Kgatliso's needs. I am going to marry her and my son loves her" he nods and focus his

attention on Kgatli as he is innocently playing on my phone.

I feel relieved that I went to Ntate Modiri and told him about my plans to marry

Tumi. The old man is losing it, the loss of his daughter has went straight to his head for him to accuse his daughter's best friend for what happened is really uncalled for. Tumi, Kgatli and I are going to be a family and nothing will stand in our

way. This feels right, my conscience is clear.

**CHAPTER 3** 

MRS MASILO

My daughter is finally getting her happy ending after all the slaving she has been doing for that man. I laugh when I think of how quickly the wheel turns. Modiri actually thought that he will have everything, an educated daughter and a rich son in law while my Tumi struggled to get even a packer at checkers to ask her out? Never! I'm Pretty hai one. My

daughter walks in with Bree's spoiled brat.

"Mama" she says kissing my cheek

"Say hello grandma" the brat waves

"What brings you by"she sighs throwing herself on the couch

"Shelly and Nosipho cut ties with me after I told them about Tshepo's proposal" I scoff

"So?" She frowns

"Mama we have been friends for a very long time and they're accusing me of trying to replace Bree"

"You knew people are going to talk, why are you bothered by this? Bree didn't

deserve Tshepo, you do. They're just mad that they didn't think as fast as you did.

Just ignore them baby, don't let them rain on your parade."

"They don't have any idea what it's like sucking up to a toddler. I can't wait to become Mrs Moletsane and take Bree's brat to boarding school." I burst out laughing

"Or you can give him up for adoption, that way he won't come back to claim your children's inheritance" she laughs

"Oh mother, are we already talking children now? I'm not ready yet and besides how will I get him to agree to giving his precious son up for adoption?"

"Stick with your mother baby and I'll teach you things. Don't you wonder how

your father does everything I tell him to do?"

"Mama?" I laugh

"Let's get him to marry you first then the rest we will do once you are Mrs
Moletsane" she laughes excitedly.

My husband walks in looking distraught.

He throws himself on the couch and
buries his head on his hands.

"What's wrong papa?"

"Dubula has been arrested for human trafficking and that bastard struck a deal with the hawks and turned state witness in exchange of a reduced prison term" I get and put my hands on my head

"No no no! This can't be happening papa"

"We need to kill him" Tumi says, he shakes his head

"We don't know where he is being detained. Everything is top secret, other cops have resigned and ran for the hills." Dammit!

## **TSHEPO**

I am chilling at the club with brothers
Thapelo and Kopano, it's been a while
since I've gone out with them Especially
now that Thapelo has returned from
Switzerland. He has been away working
there for the past 5 years, he left just
after my wedding. He was my best man.

"I can't believe that Breezy just disappeared" that's what he used to call Bree.

"Yeah man, I searched everywhere" Kopano looks distracted

"Is everything okay?" He sighs

"The owner of the club Bree disappeared from has been arrested for charges of human trafficking." I frown

"What! Dubula has been arrested?

"Wasn't he there at your wedding and isn't he Tumi's godfather?" Thapelo asks, I chuckle

"What are you saying, that he might be involved in Bree's disappearance?" He shrugs

"Something doesn't add up here, your wife disappeared in his club and years later he is arrested for human trafficking. Don't you see that this can't be just a coincidence" Kopano says

"I'll ask Tumi's father to look into it" kopano shakes his head

"What did the Masilo family fed you? Hire a P.I or even pay the cops for some information don't always run to the Masilos for everything that concerns your wife. Ntate Modiri was complaining about you going to see the Masilos and fail to even stop by just to greet the man who fathered the woman you claimed to be the love of your life" I chuckle bitterly giving Thapelo a death stare

"So you went to visit that old man and he put those ideas into your head. You have been away living it up in Switzerland while I had to raise an infant alone. If it wasn't for Tumi I don't know where I would be. Stop hating on Tumi and her family, they have been there for me and you don't know the kind of woman Tumi is" Thapelo laughs

"I know her pretty well, I know the tattoo above her vagina too. Don't tell me shit

about Tumi. I fucked her with 3 of my friends and the same time. I'm just surprised you saw a wife material there" I throw a punch and he chuckles

"You are weak Tshepo go to your fucken hoe bloody yes man" he says walking out.
I sip my drink pissed off

"Aren't you going to go after your brother?" I ask Kopano

"You are my brother too" I sigh

"I just hope you know what you are doing Tshepo, you have come a long way since what we went through. I don't want to see you go back to that dark place again. Thapelo is acting like this because we saw how Bree pulled you out of that dark place. We are forever indebted to her, we love her for you"

"She's gone Kopano"

"Did you perhaps see her body? And let's say she comes back, are you honestly telling me that you will be okay with her moving on with another man?" I clench my jaws

"Exactly! Don't be in too much of a hurry to move on because once you do and she

comes back, you will see that you lost a diamond for a coal" he says walking out leaving me in deep thought.

**BREE** 

"You are beautiful señorita" I fake blushing

"I want to take you away from the hands of the Santos brothers, allow me to love you and take care of you. I will take you away from Mexico and give you the American dream."

"Si"he smiles. We are in a hotel in Mexico city, he has more that 50 guards everywhere he goes

"Why do you have so many guards?"

"Because I am an important man. Many people want to be me including the Santos brothers"

"So what if they sent me to kill you" he laughs

"How can you kill me"

"I could poison you or stab you during sex, it might be a suicide mission. Who knows? If the Islam can kill and die for

Allah I could do the same for the Santos brothers" he laughs throwing his head back

"I like you señorita" I laugh. Pablo is not as bad as the Santos brothers and I like that he says please and thank you. His men look very loyal to him. He looks like he is in he's mid 50s but ages well.

"Get ready, we are leaving at 6 pm" he says kissing my cheek" I sigh, it's now or never.

We are now at Atticus hotel where the fiesta bowl is taking place. Mr Pablo is a keynote speaker and as soon as he gets on stage, I will disappear.

"I'm about to go on stage my Lupita. If you need anything ask Neto he will be at your aid." I smile as he pecks my lips

He gets on stage and begins delivering his speech.

"Can I please go to the ladies room, I need to powder my nose" I ask the Neto guy

"Go with the lady" he instructs the two body guards to accompany me. I get to the bathroom and pace up and down

trying to find a way out but there are no windows. A lady walks in wearing a turkey costume

"That's nice" I say to her laughing

"I'm with the new Mexico state university cheerleading squad, I am the school mascot." She says smiling. She takes off the costume

"Mind if I leave it with you until I do my business? I nod smiling. As soon as she closes the door, I quickly wear the custom. She won't be naked she is wearing a bodysuit. I put on the head not minding how hot and stuffy it is inside. I open the door and walk out unnoticeble, the bodyguard busy talking. I make my way outside the hotel and run as fast as a can.

"Hey turkey lady" someone shouts but I don't stop. It's getting hotter inside the costume and whoever is chasing me is not helping. A yellow cab taxi passed and I flag it. It stops and I launch myself inside taking off the head.

"Albuquerque International Sunport por favor"

"Si" I don't even have money on me but I am going home to South Africa without involving the embassy or the police. I don't know how but I'll find a way, I don't trust anyone.

CHAPTER 4

**BOITUMELO** 

Uncle Dubula getting arrested is not good at all, on top of that Tshepo has been acting strange, I don't know if I am imagining things but last night when he came back from the club, he was cold nje. I just hope he hasn't changed his mind about us or so help me God I'm about to catch a case. I'm in the kitchen making breakfast, he comes into the kitchen wearing a formal suit.

"Good morning baby" he mumbles a greeting. Something is wrong here

"did I do something wrong?" He chuckles

"Why would you think you did something wrong?" I shrug

"Tumi I don't have time for your nagging, I have to go." He says grabbing his car keys and walking out leaving me dumbstruck. I decide to call my mother

## PHONE CONVERSATION

"Hello baby" I sniff

"Mama something is wrong, he has been moody since last night. This morning he snapped at me, what if he knows something?"

"I think Dubula's arrest is making you paranoid. Relax honey he might be going through some stuff. Remember you are not the only one who is receiving negative reactions from people about your engagement. You know men are weak and let what people say about them get to them"

"I think you are right mama, what do you think I should do?"

"Wear something sexy, go to his office and remind him why he fell in love with you and I also suggest that you speed up on the wedding. Go and sign at the court. You will have your big wedding some other time, as it is we have not received a letter from his family yet which is alarming baby. You have come too far to get this man, don't drop the ball now."

"You are right Mama, thank you very much for always being there for me" we talk some more until we say our goodbyes.

I dropped Kgatli off at the day care and now I am making my way to the office.

I'm wearing a sexy lingerie set and fish nets I'm just covering up with a light trench coat. I click my heels swaying my hips side to side.

"Is he in?" I ask his P.a and he nods. I walk straight in and he just lifts his head for a second looking at me before returning to his laptop.

"Baby"

"Tumi I am very busy, you can't just show up at my place of work?" I walk up to him and turn the chair to face me. I open my trench coat throwing it on the floor

before climbing on to of him. I grind on his already erect dick while I whisper

"Don't you love anymore?" His breathing changes

"Don't you want me anymore daddy?" I slightly bite his earlobe causing him to groan. I get off his lap and crouch down opening his flyer taking out his manhood and putting it in my warm mouth and sucking on it like my life depends on it. I slide my underwear to the side before

taking his rock hard member and shoving it in my pussy. I ride him for dear life while he groans and cusses.

"That was epic" he says cleaning himself up with a wipe.

"Now tell me what's eating you up? We are about to get married, we can't always fight like teenagers. We sit and talk

through whatever it is that's bothering us" he sighs

"Did you sleep with Thapelo?" Mxm I should have known that piece of shit would tell his brother about our orgy.

"What! Why the hell would I sleep with Thapelo? We all know he's a ladies man and besides I would have told you before getting into a relationship with you."

"So how the hell did he find out about the tattoo you have above your pussy" I chuckle

"Because his friend Thuso is the tattoo artist who did the tattoo for me. Thuso and I dated back then, I told you about that" he sighs

"Is that all?"

"Yeah eish I'm sorry baby. I should have known that my brother wants to plant a seed of doubt in my mind. I should have asked you first" I smile

"People are not happy about our relationship baby they will pull all sorts of stunts to stop us from getting married.

Which is why I suggest that we elope" his eyes pop

"Baby I'm an African man, it's important to me that I pay the bride price and introduce you to my ancestors." I sit on his lap again and pout

"We will do all that baby but let's first get married in court so that when the evil wishers try to discourage us, it will be too late." He looks at me thoughtfully for a while

"Okay" I squil kissing him all over his face

"Thank you baby" he smiles

## **KOPANO**

"I don't know how to thank you son, you have been taking care of us for the past 4 years without fail, may God bless you" he says wiping his tears

"Ntate Modiri, we are family and that will never change because Bree is not here. You are my father too" he nods

"How are you coping after losing your wife?" My wife died two years ago from cervical Cancer. We didn't have any children yet.

"I miss her everyday, sometimes I feel like I am losing my mind. That woman was my everything and I was angry for a long time at God for taking away such a good person"

"Sesotho sere sejana se Setle hasejelwe meaning that good people don't last.

Look at Bree, I fought so much with my wife for giving her that name now the reality of not shouting her name anymore hurts me more than anything" he sheds a tear

"Sne was a good woman son, I used to encourage Bree to befriend her and not that loose Masilo girl. Bree didn't go to clubs but that girl made sure that my daughter went to a club" this man has been insisting that Tumi and her family know what happened to Bree I honestly thought he was just hating on them until Dubula's arrest now I'm convinced more than ever that something is fishy

"The family friend and club owner of where Bree disappeared from is in police custody for human trafficking charges.

The truth is about to come out, my contact at the hawks told me that a lot of police officials are implicated in the syndicate. If that family is involved, they will be arrested soon" he smiles faintly

"My heart goes out to that stupid brother of yours. If I knew that he was this weak, I wouldn't have allowed him to marry my daughter" I sigh

"I just fear that he will go back to that dark place again when he realises what he got himself into" my brothers and I were abused by our father both physically and sexually. Tshepo suffered the most because he was the youngest and our father's favourite. The abuse got too much that Tshepo killed our father with his work gun. My mother took the fall for him and spent 8 years in prison, Tshepo became rebellious and very angry, he joined a gang and lived life on the fast

lane. The rest of the family wrote him off because of how much he had changed. He became a heartless feared gang member in our community until he met Bree. As heartless and rebellious as he was he loved school so he attended university and that's where he met and fell in love with Bree. We watched him as he changed into a good person and the fact that Bree was studying psychology also helped because she was his therapist and his therapy if you catch my drift. We all thought he will go back to that dark

place after Bree's disappearance but I guess Kgatli and Tumi gave him a will to survive, that's why the family ended up giving him their blessings to marry Tumi but I fear things are about to become complicated.

**BREE** 

I'm in the cab that's taking me to the airport. My heart is beating so fast. We get stuck in traffic and I keep looking behind me to see if no car is following us. We keep moving with the slow traffic then suddenly the driver has a gun pointed at him because his window was half open.

"Lupita get out of the car now!" It's a bit dark but I can tell that it's Neto. I get out of the car with my turkey suit and they

drag me into another car. I kept on crying thinking to myself why does God hate me so much. We drove into the hotel and I was dragged into the room Pablo and I were using. They threw me on the bed and Pablo entered

"I hate betrayal señorita" I sobbed and started playing with the chain that Sofia gave me and an idea instantly pops into my mind, God let it work

"I am sorry Pablo please forgive me but I couldn't kill you" he frowns

"What do you mean?"

"The Santos brothers sent me to kill you. That's why I asked you all those questions, I was supposed to drug you after having sex with you then suffocate you with a pillow. They promised me my freedom if I successfully kill you. I got talking to you, I got to know you and I

realized that you are a good man. You remind me so much of my father. I decided to run away instead of killing you because I know if I fail killing you, the Santos brothers would kill me and my son back in south Africa" I say wailing. He looks at me as I cry and comes to me and hugs me as I cry on his shoulders

"Neto get her paperwork and a passport, book her a flight to South Africa" he says then wipes my tears

"I knew those pieces of shit brothers were up to something. Thank you for not going through with it. I value loyalty more than anything and I reward it handsomely. Tomorrow you will leave to go back home, I give you your freedom as a reward for not trying to kill me. As for the Santos brothers, they are as good as dead" he says stroking my cheek. I don't know how to feel right now. I took a shower and got into bed. I thought Pablo will want to have sex with me but he

didn't, instead he cuddled me the whole night. I couldn't sleep, anxious about what will happen tomorrow.

True to his word I got my papers ready around midday and my flight is at 9 pm.

"Gracias por Todo señor(thank you Sir) we are now at the airport I'm finally going home

"Here take this, if you ever need anything call me and this will give you a good start to take care of your son" he says handing me a stack of dollars and his business card.

## FLASH BACK

"I would like to thank my best friend Bree for coming, although we all know she's miss goody two shoes here doesn't go to

clubs, she left her six months old baby just to be here" I laugh and hug her as she gets off the stage

"You have drama shame my friend" she hugs me

"I'm going to miss you friendo" I frown

"Where are you going?" She giggles

"Oopsy I'm drunk don't mind me" I shake my head. Uncle Dubula made his way to our table

"Ladies!"

"This place looks beautiful" I say to him and he smiles

"Your husband is outside, he can't come inside with the baby" uncle Dubula says and I get up all panicked

"Is my son alright" he laughs

"Relax nana, he just misses his wife" I giggle

"Let's go" he says taking my hand

"Uyaphi chomi" Nosi asks, uncle Dubula let's go of my hand "My husband is outside" she shakes her head

"That man of yours can't even spend a few hours without seeing you" I laugh

"I'm coming and tell Shelly to stop dancing on the tables" I say rushing out of the club. I get outside and look around, I don't see my husband or uncle Dubula I decide to go back inside.

"Where do you think you are going?"

"I can't find my husband please tell him I'll wait for him inside, it's cold out here" uncle Dubula shakes his headand I frown

"Boys!" Two men grab me, I try to fight them off

"You are going to Russia Sisi" a car stops and I feel them inject me with something.

"Uncle, what's taking so long" I see Tumi walk towards me, my vision becomes blurry

"Sleep friend, I will takecare of your family" she laughs I try to keep my eyes open but I struggle then everything went black

## **END OF FLASH BACK**

"Mam!" The flight attendant wakes me up

"We have arrived in Los Angeles
California" I nod I am connecting to South
Africa via LA.

I get to the flight to South Africa and I settle in and buckle up. I am going home finally!!!



They say every dog has its day. Dubula has turned state witness and is not intending on going down alone. He and the Masilos have been in the business of human trafficking for a long time. He met thabang and Pretty more than 28 years ago but this is a dog eat dog world and he is not about to spare the Masilos when the wife Pretty is the Kingpin.

"So are you telling me the police commissioner is involved?"

"Yes along with other police officers mostly detectives working in the human trafficking division"

"Can you name them?" Dubula nods and the lead investigating officer Lamola gives him a pen and paper to write down all the names of the members of the saps who are involved" another officer walks into the interrogation room much to detective Lamola's irritation

"Sir there's a woman by the name of Lupita Santos to see you" he frowns

"Do not disturb me for a woman I don't know. Get another detective to assist her I'm busy with the biggest case."

"It's about Dubula and the Masilos" that gets Lamola's attention.

"Continue with the names. I will be right back" he stood up and left the room, leaving Dubula wondering who could that be.

**BREE** 

I arrived at O.R Tambo international airport. I breathed out the breath I've been holding since the day I was

abducted. As much as I miss my husband and my son first stop is the police station.

"Winchester hills please" I say to the Uber driver, I just gave out my statement to a man named Lamola and he promised that arrests will be made soon. Now I'm going home to my house to see my family.

I arrived in Winchester hills and the security opened for me and I knocked

with butterflies in my stomach. Mme Moletsane my mother in law opened the door for me and she dropped the glass she was holding.

"Bree is this really you my child?" She asks sobbing and hugging me

"Mom is ev....." Tumi stops on her tracks when she sees me followed by my husband. I let go of my mother in law and go straight to Tumi slapping the shit out of her but Tshepo pulls me off

"You thought I wouldn't come back after what you and your uncle did to me?" I ask shouting and crying. Everyone rushed to the kitchen where we were standing.

Tumi hides behind my husband. I spotted Kopano and their cousin Sputla....

"Bree where were you, what happened?"
Tshepo asks, why is he not rushing to me?
Why doesn't he look happy to see me?

"Ask Tumi" everyone turns Thier attention to Tumi. A little boy rushes to the kitchen shouting "mommy" he runs to Tumi showing his finger that got hurt

"It's sore mommy" and I feel my heart break into a million pieces. I chuckle

"Your last words to me (sleep friend, I will take care of your family), my son calls you mommy and let me guess...my husband calls you baby" Tshepo looks down and I laugh like a mad woman.

"Let me get this right, while I was suffering in the streets of st Maria Mexico you were playing happy family with the very same person who orcharstrated my kidnapping, did you even look for me or were you all working together? All of you in my house wining and dining with my enemy, Kopano? Mama? Were you all in this. Did you all have me kidnapped so that you could have Tumi as your

daughter in-law" Tshepo's tears fall shamelessly

"That's not true makoti, you know we love you. We thought we were doing what's right for Kgatli" Mme Moletsane says

"You are awfully quiet Tumi tell them what you did to live my life. Tell them how you destroyed me" Tumi keeps quiet. A knock disturbs us and Mme Moletsane

opens the door. Two police officers walk in

"We are looking for boitumelo Masilo" I point her out

"Miss Masilo, you are under arrest for the kidnapping of Mrs Breeseas Moletsane" they drag her out while my son is creaming mommy! I watch as they drag her out and I watch as my son cries for another woman. I look at Tshepo for the

longest time before going upstairs to the guest room because I'm pretty sure they have been sleeping together in my bedroom. I need to rest and figure out my next move.

## **TSHEPO**

Tumi can't be involved in this, there must be some sort of explanation. We called my family over to let them know that we are married..we officially signed our marriage certificate today in court. This was supposed to be our happy ending. How did everything change so quickly?

"Mom please look after Kgatliso I'm going down to the police station to get a lawyer for Tumi" Kopano chuckles

"Did you see Bree? Your wife is back home after 4 years of being missing and

you want to run to the bitch who is responsible for her disappearance?" I scoff

"Tumi is my wife, I had my marriage with Bree annolled. We are not married anymore but Tumi needs me now"

"Now I'm convinced that you have been fed korobela(love potion). The woman who has been there for you at your

lowest, the woman who practically willed you to live is now a liar and Tumi is a saint? Tshepo go attend to Bree and your son. Explain the truth to Kgatli about his real mother, Tumi has her own family to help her with a lawyer" I know they hate Tumi but I need to look Tumi in the eyes and ask her the truth. I know for certain she's not involved, she was there when I cried day and night for Bree. I click my tongue and I grab my car keys leaving them shouting my name.

"We are looking for the officer in charge of Boitumelo Masilo's case." I'm at Mondeo police station and I'm with my lawyer Sifiso. The officers lead us to an office at the back

"Gentlemen my name is Lamola I'm the arresting officer and a detective for the hawks."

"I am Sifiso Mbatha and this is my client's husband Tshepo Moletsane" he raise his eyebrow as soon as the lawyer mentions my name.

"What are the charges against my client and what evidence do you have against her? May I see the docket please. He makes a call instructing someone to bring the case file. He hangs up and focuses on me

"I have a tape I would like to play for you" he says clicking on the laptop before turning the laptop to face me. A video of Dubula appears

**DUBULA'S CONFESSION** 

"MRS MASILO AND COMMISSIONER
MASILO INSTRUCTED ME TO LOOK FOR A
BUYER FOR THEIR DAUGHTER'S FRIEND.
THEY WANTED TO GET HER OUT OF THE
WAY SO THAT THEIR DAUGHTER CAN BE

WITH HER HUSBAND TSHEPO
MOLETSANE. I SOLD HER TO THE
RUSSIANS BUT A YEAR LATER THEY ASKED
ME TO CHECK IF SHE WAS STILL IN
RUSSIA, WE COULDN'T FIND HER. WE
ASSUMED SHE DIED OR WAS SOLD TO
ANOTHER COUNTRY."

**BOITUMELO MASILO'S CONFESSION** 

"IT WAS DUBULA'S IDEA. BY THE TIME I
WENT OUTSIDE TO LOOK FOR MY

FRIEND, I SAW THEM DRAG HER INTO
THE CAR. I TRIED TO FIGHT BUT HE TOLD
ME THAT IF I BREATHE A WORD TO
ANYONE, HE WOULD KILL ME AND MY
PARENTS SO I HAD NO CHOICE BUT TO
KEEP QUIET'" SHE SOBS

PRETTY MASILO'S CONFESSION

"DUBULA IS THE ONE INVOLVED IN THAT KIDNAPPING, MY DAUGHTER AND I HAD

NOTHING TO DO WITH IT NOW TURN

OFF THAT CAMERA AND GET MY LAWYER

IN HERE. I WILL NOT SAY ANYTHING

FURTHER"

"Mr Moletsane your other wife also gave us her statement which corresponds with Dubula's statement. The Masilos are not only charged with your wife's kidnapping but over 159 counts of human trafficking, aiding and abetting, defeating the ends of justice, estortion and kidnapping. I am

waiting for the NPA to access Boitumelo's charges but for now she's charged for being an accomplice to your wife's kidnapping" I feel my lungs deflate. I get up and run out of the police station like a mad man. I just married the devil. Tears blind my vision as I drive back to my house. I get to my house and I find my mother still there along with Kopano but everyone else has left. I go room to room looking for Bree but I don't find her.

<sup>&</sup>quot;Where's my wife?" Kopano chuckles

"I thought you went to see your wife in prison" I scoff

"I'm talking about Bree dammit!" I snapped

"Your ex wife took his son and left" no no no!

"She said her lawyer will be in touch regarding a custody hearing for Kgatli" I sink to the floor and cry

## **NARRATED**

Ntate Modiri opens the door and almost falls over when he sees his daughter and grandson standing at the door. He takes off his glasses not believing his eyes.

"Bree a ruri kewena ngwanake(is it really you?)" He cries while Bree hugs him and they cry in each other's arms. They break the hug after some time and they sit and talk while Kgatli watching TV

"And that's when I came up with the idea to accuse the Santos brothers of wanting him dead" Bree says narrating everything she went through not leaving a single thing out

"I have always known that Masilos had a hand in your disappearance, that family also competed with us fot no apparent reason. It started when your mother became friends with that woman. You could tell from how she talked that she lacked peace in her life. She controls that husband of hers and wants to control everyone." He says wiping his tears

"Papa Tshepo hurt me, he couldn't wait for me. He gave up on me and married Tumi. Do you know he had our marriage annolled? When the police came to arrest her, he went after her instead of being with me his wife. I am so done with the Moletsanes I want nothing to do with them." Bree says sobbing, this is not how she pictured her return to be.

"It's okay baby, this is your home. You and my grandson can live here until you pick up the pieces of your life. Tshepo really disappointed me, out of all his brothers he was the only one who abandoned me. Kopano bought me groceries and medications every month without fail and Thapelo is still paying for your brother's university fees. He made sure he called me every week since he found out about your kidnapping even though he was overseas." Bree nods

"I will forever be grateful to them. I need a lawyer because I know Tshepo will make things difficult for me to be with Kgatliso"

**CHAPTER 6** 

## **TSHEPO**

I feel so lost, nothing makes sense at all. How the hell did I get here, was I that blind? I can't believe I gave up on the only woman who never gave up on me. The woman who showed me that I can live again after i killed my father and got my mother arrested. I wanted to die hence I lived life on the edge but she revived me and showed me that I am still a man when I felt less than one. How can I let myself be manipulated like this? Tumi

really did a number on me. All this time her father convinced me that he was helping me, my brothers told me and I never believed them. The Masilos will pay, each and every one of them will pay. Just because I got out of the business of killing doesn't mean that I forgot how to kill. I walk inside the house I never thought I would ever enter again but here I am again.

"Look what the cat dragged in, my number one assassin. The butcher himself" Tito says giving me a bro hug

"Tito my man" we do the gang hand shake

"What brings you here?" He asks handing me a drink

"Revenge" I say downing a glass of whiskey

"You will always be one of us man, I still tell stories about the angry kid who killed with no mercy" I chuckle

"I've grown from that now"

"What do you need?"

"I want you to get me inside the state penitentiary specifically where they are holding the police commissioner Masilo without being detected" he nods

"Consider it done Butcher" I chuckle

"Don't call me that. That man died a long time ago" we talk for some time until I leave and go straight to Ntate Modiri's house.

I park my car outside and take a deep breath. That's all I seem to do everytime I come here. It's hardly been a month when I told ntate Modiri that I'm marrying another woman and he will never see his grandson again. I chuckle shaking my head, life is unpredictable indeed. I hear laughter as I approach the kitchen door. I missed that sound with everything in me.

"Tshepo" she says as soon as she opens the door.

"May I come it please?" She moves aside making way for me to enter. The kitchen is a mess I think they're baking.

"Hello big guy" I say to my son who looks so happy. You won't even tell that he has known Bree for just a day. I guess the bond between mother and child is strong.

"Hello daddy" I hand him my phone and tell him to go sit at the sitting room and play games.

"I'm sorry" I don't know what else to say

"It's okay" she says not even looking at me. I walk up close to her and attempt to hug her but she turns quickly pointing me with a knife

"Stay right where you are. Don't you you dare come close to me."

"I know I let you down but God knows I searched everywhere for you. I couldn't find you and our son needed a mother" she chuckles

"When did you become stupid Tshepo? I just don't get it. Tumi throws a party at a club and she insists that I go knowing very well I have an infant. I get abducted then jiki jiki she's the saviour. Even a stupid person can read between the lines. My

father tried to warn you Moletsane and you ignored him, instead you deprived him of the opportunity to know his grandson. Your precious Tumi and her evil uncle sold me to the Russians who later sold me to the most cruel brothers in Mexico. I was a prostitute for 4 years having different dicks inside all my holes. I suffered while you played happy family with the same person who did this to me. Do you know your perfect Tumi beat my son up? He has bruises all over his fucken body. I hate you Tshepo Moletsane and

thank you for divorcing me because I want nothing to do with you. Take your stupid apology and shove it where the sun don't shine because as for me Breeseas Modiri I am done with you. From now on we will communicate through the lawyers" she says wiping her tears and leaving me standing there. She comes back with Kgatliso in her arms

<sup>&</sup>quot;Say goodbye to daddy"

"Bye daddy" I smile faintly and walk out. I get to my car and call Tito to find out if he has anything for me. I will let Bree bond with our son and maybe cool off a bit but she's crazy if she thinks I will give up on her. She knows I'm not one to walk away from anything.

### **BREE**

I watch as he drives off and I click my tongue. I am beyond angry for how stupid

Tshepo was and the fact that Tumi laid her filthy hands on my son makes me livid. My father walks in and looks at me with pity written all over his face as I wipe my tears.

"Do you mind looking after Kgatliso for a while, I need to go somewhere." He nods and I request a cab. Now that I have my ID and other other documents I need to fix my shit and get my job back.

I get to Sandton clinic and everyone looks shocked to see me. Tears prick out as I get flashbacks of how perfect my life used to be. A was professional 24 year old mother and wife who lived in the burbs and married a rich, influential and handsome guy. I was on top of the world but now it feels like the world is really on top of me. I knock at the chief of staff's office

"Mrs Smith" I greet with a smile, I'm surprised to see her in this office. She

used to be head of cardiology department

"Bree!" She says getting up and hugging me

"Oh my word Bree what happened to you" she says showing me a seat

"I was abducted and trafficked" I say wiping my tears.

"Your husband did come 4 years ago to report that you were missing. I'm so happy that you are back and safe" I smile then clear my throat

"I don't know if I still have a job here, I will understand if I don't because it's been too long not to feel my vacancy" she smiles

"Mr Mthembu was very fond of you. He never replaced you at all. We have been working with psychologists on contract basis only. When he retired he begged

me to continue until you return, he firmly believed that you will return and here you are. Your job is safe but you have to wait at least a couple of months, 3 months max for the contract of the current psychologist to end then you can come back." I get up and hug her again

"Mr Mthembu is such a good man. Thank you very much, I will take this time to fully prepare myself" I say smiling

"I will draw up a new contract in the meantime and find out how do we pay you. I will meet with the board members and I am also going to need your case number so that we can pay you for the years you were away" I frown

"But you don't have to, I was not working then"

"Yes but we have to pay you at least 33 % of your salary because you were still working under us when you were

trafficked" wow I really didn't expect that.

At least some good news for a change

"Thank you very much Mrs Smith" she chuckles

"Call me Suzanne please"

I get home and find a car parked outside.

I hope it's not the Moletsanes because

I'm not in the mood to deal with them

now. I walk into the house and find my

father chatting up a storm with Shelly and Nosipho. I'm so weary of friends honestly I trust no one except my father and my brother now. People can hurt you, I want nothing to do with friends.

# **NARRATED**

Mr Masilo is in his private holding cell laying on his bed thinking of ways to

escape prison. Him and his lawyer are working on a tight defence that paints only Dubula as the guilty one and the Masilos guilty by association only. Their bail hearing is tomorrow and he is very confident that all his family members himself included will get bail. The benefits of having money. He is lost in thought when he hears the door close. He looks up and finds Tshepo Moletsane standing inside his cell carrying a butcher knife.

<sup>&</sup>quot;Son" he says getting up

"You sure played me old man I give you that"

"Son whatever you have heard is not true,
I am working hard to prove my family's
innocence" Tshepo chuckles

"What happened to all the money I was giving your men to go to different countries to look for my wife? You know what, nevermind I don't care. I'm going to deal with your wife and daughter the very

same way they dealt with my wife but thank your lucky stars that you won't be around to witness it" he says walking towards him and stabing him multiple times until he is satisfied

"One down three to go" he says to himself

#### CHAPTER 7

# **BOITUMELO MASILO**

News of my father getting stabbed in prison broke my mother and I so much. Our bail hearing was supposed to be this afternoon but it was postponed to two

days from now. Prison is not a nice place to be in, I watched dramas like lockdown and I honestly thought that they were exaggerating but no it's even worse than what they displayed on TV. This place is dirty and unhygienic, the food is below average and the treatment is beyond horrific. My mother and I are holding on by a thread, our lawyer reckons we'll be out of here soon especially because we need to bury our father.

"Princess you have a visitor" the prison warder says opening the cell for me. We get to the visitor's area and my best friend is there looking glamorous. I'm almost tempted to throw up

"Came to gloat?" She looks at me for some time. This is not Bree, the Bree I know is weak, too nice and likable. The Bree I know believes in Santa Claus and the Easter bunny. This Bree before me looks....I don't know, hard? for lack of a better word.

"What did I ever do to you Tumi, why do you hate me so much?" I chuckle

"Hate is such a strong woman my bestie.

Call me the fixer, you had a life that you didn't deserve. The universe favoured you. You got the looks, the body, the brains as if that was not enough you got the man, the mansion, the huge wedding no no no Sisi that was not fair at all so I had to fix things." She scoffs

"So you separate me from my son and my husband, you and your uncle sell me and I live life as a prostitute for years getting drugged, beaten up and told to do degrading things and you call that fixing things? Let's talk about my life shall we and tell me if I had it as easy as you claimed. My mother died when I was only six years old, I had to become a mother to my brother at the age of six, when you were busy playing with your huge doll house I had to check the temperature of

the bottle to feed my brother. I had to learn how to cook so that when my dad came from a double shift, he would have a plate of food, while you went out to restaurants with mommy and daddy. I studied my matric using candles because my father couldn't afford to pay the electricity bill while you went to house parties. I studied like hell because I wanted to get out of that situation. You grew up in a 6 room house while I grew up in a RDP house. How was I favoured by the universe? Because of a man? Tshepo

could have left me on our first year of marriage or cheated on me with his PA. Men are unpredictable and untrustworthy so you can't count marriage as an achievement. You ruined my life for dick and jealousy nothing else but I want to thank you for what you have put through. You gave me a wake up call, I am not that weak little Bree who loves everyone and believes everyone is good. I am fierce and resilient now, bitch I made it out. I fought and I came back. You didn't fix shit because here you are behind bars

and here I am free. you and your evil family will pay for what you put me through" she got up and walked out. I feel like screaming! But she can gloat all she wants I am getting out of here and I'm taking my man back.

## PRETTY MASILO

"You don't look okay" we are outside enjoying the sun. We are given 1 hour each day and this is where I usually catch up with my daughter or sometimes during lunch. I can't wait to get out of this place gosh this place is just horrible.

Dubula had my husband killed that I know for sure now things are getting more and more difficult for us.

"I had a visit from Bree" I chuckle

"Let me guess! She was crying asking how can you do this to her, she trusted you blah blah blah" I say mimicking her small voice

"No Mama, the weak pathetic Bree died the day she got kidnapped, this Bree is a tough cookie. Even her facial features have gone hard. Strong jawline and empty cold eyes" I burst out laughing "Strong jawline? Don't make laugh wena maan. She's just trying to intimidate you, don't fall for it. She will always be weak like her father" she stares at me

"Mama what's your problem with ntate Modiri" I shift uncomfortably

"Nothing"

"No mama the way you hate that man, you never have anything nice to say about him nje" I scoff

"He is just weak and pathetic just like his daughter and the whole family nje they are poverty stricken nje anyway let's forget about them" she nods and I sigh

It's now in the evening. It's lights out, I'm in my cell sleeping with one eye open literally, blink in here and you will find yourself losing your virginity all over again. I'm sharing a cell with a lady named sbosh. The door opens and I don't bother sitting up because I know she sleeps with the prison warders at night, that's none of my business. I feel a shadow hovering over me and I open my eyes. I instantly get up

"Tshepo, my son what are you doing here?" He looks at me with no emotions.

"So you and your daughter thought that you can make a fool of me?" I swallow hard

"Did you perhaps do some research on who you are dealing with?" I shake my head

"Well you should have, you trafficked my wife and made her suffer. She was a

prostitute and she told me that they
penetrated her from every hole. I just
couldn't picture that. I need a live
demonstration to get a clear
understanding of what she meant. Boys"
six men walk in and start touching me

"Scream and I'll kill you" he says showing me a gun. The men undress me. I'm about to be raped. One shoves his manhood on my anus and the other on my pussy.and they start moving while

groaning. They are not gentle at all. One opens my mouth while choking me and I even feel dick on my ears they take turns raping every hole in my body. It's like they were fed Viagra or something because this went on for hours.

"That's enough boys"

"Damn butcher this was epic" one says putting on his pants and they exit.

"Go shower, you reek of semen. You dare tell anyone I will kill you your precious daughter and she will suffer the same fate, do I make myself clear?" I nod crying

"Don't cry, my wife went through the same thing. I will see you same time tomorrow" he gets up and leaves. I look over at sbosh's bed and it's empty. I try to get up but I can't, I crawl to the showers and let the water wash the semen off and the sweat away. I can still here them

groaning. I lay my face on the floor and wail.

### **BREE**

"Now that everyone is here, I would like to thank each and everyone of you for being there for my family. I am really humbled that you didn't neglect my father" I say smiling. I cooked dinner and invited Kopano, Thapelo, Shelly and

Nosipho over. My brother will also be coming soon.

"It was our pleasure Bree. You and Ntate Modiri are family" Thapelo says winking, always the sweetest and carefree one

"Thank you for being true friends Shelly and Nosipho. I know I didn't welcome you well the other day but when my father told me all that you did in attempts to

find me and the project bring Bree back, I am just happy to have true friends. I was just weary but I know you got my back" they both get up and hug me

"We cut ties with Tumi the moment she told us she's engaged to Tshepo. I never thought she could stoop so low." Shelly says

"Can we please not talk about that devil" I say going to the kitchen to prepare dessert.

"You are still as beautiful if not more. I should have made my move on you"

Thapelo says rubbing his hands together with a smirk

"Mxm I wouldn't have dated you Mr player, you broke Shelly's heart" he laughs

"She seems to be okay, do you think she's seeing anyone now" I chuckle

"Leave my friend alone" I say smiling he becomes serious and walks up to me and hugs me for a long time

"It's good to have you home Bree" I close my eyes and let the tears fall

"You will always be family don't crucify us for his actions please" I break the hug and nod.

"Aren't you a sight for sore eyes" I scream running to my brother and launching myself in his arms crying and he is crying too.

"Yoh now that T. man is here we might as well go home because we will not be given attention anymore" I smack
Thapelo's shoulder laughing

"You look beautiful sis, I dreamed of this moment everyday but it was never this beautiful in my dreams" I laugh through my tears. We eat and chat, I look around the table and I thank God for keeping me alive for this long to experience this moment again. Everyone seems genuinely happy and I know for sure that these are my people.

"I'm so sorry about Sne" I say to kopano, I am outside now kopano is the last one to

leave. Everyone has left already, Thabiso and Kgatli are inseparable and are playing games, my father is watching the news as usual.

"It's okay, I'm learning to live without her"

"One day at a time right?" He nods. Sne and Kopano were couple goals, they loved eachother so much that young couples like Tshepo and I looked up to

them. It's such a shame her life was cut short, Kopano is a good man.

"So what's your next step?" I sigh

"Getting joined custody of my son and getting back to work"

"You won't give him a second chance? He still loves you, he acted stupidly but I know for sure that he still loves you. He

panicked, you know because of his past he has attachment issues, he was attached to you and healed through you but when you disappeared Tumi gave him that same comfort he got from you and he started depending on her making his judgement clouded." I chuckle

"I thought I was the doctor here" he smiles

"I fear that he went back to his old ways.

Mr Masilo was stabbed to death in his

cell. This has Tshepo written all over it"

"Tshepo can do as he pleases but as for me, I'm all about picking up the pieces of my life" he sighs

"He won't let you go and you know how dangerous he can be"

"I am ready for anything, I survived the Santos brothers and a cartel leader Pablo. Tshepo is nothing compared to what I've been through."

**CHAPTER 8** 

## **NARRATED**

Ntate Modiri looks at his phone shocked before hanging up. He never thought in a million years that he would ever receive a call from Pretty ever again. He wonders why she needs to see him urgently. What game is she playing? He thinks to himself

"You look like you've seen a ghost."
Thabiso says walking into the sitting Room.

"A ghost from the past" he says shaking his head

"I need to go somewhere, Bree is not back yet will you look after Kgatliso?"

"You don't need to ask, old man" Thabiso says smiling. Ntate Modiri calls a cab and it drops him off at SunCity state

penitentiary. He sits at the visitors area and waits for Pretty. She walks in like a penguin with a bruised face. She walks slowly towards Modiri while tears blind her vision. All she wants to do is to throw herself in his arms and cry.

"Pretty" he says to this woman who looks like a shadow of what she used to be

<sup>&</sup>quot;Mohau" she says in a breaking voice.

"Why am I here? I feel like I'm betraying my daughter by even talking to you."

"I am sorry Modiri, please forgive me for everything I have done to you and your family. At the time I was clouded by jealousy" Modiri frowns

"I hated Bree because i saw her as the reason why you and I couldn't be together" he chuckles

"What are you on about woman? We ended way before Bree was born." She sighs

"I wanted to come back to you, I packed my bags and carried Tumi on my back. I already packed and was willing to disobey my parents. The Masilos were coming to pay mahadi for me but my heart was with you. When I went to your home. Your aunt Maleburu threw me out and told me that you are married and have a child on

the way. I told her the truth that I was hiding. I told her that Boitumelo is your daughter. She told me if ever I tell you or anyone, she will make sure I suffer for the rest of my life." Modiri chuckles

"What game are you playing now?"

"You can ask your aunt, I am telling you the truth Modiri. Boitumelo is your daughter. When I told my mother that I was carrying your child. They already arranged for me to marry into the Masilo

family, my mom told me to pass the pregnancy as Thabang's, You know you are the one who broke my virginity." He sighs

"If this is true then why wait all these years to tell me?" She sighs

"Something has been happening to me for the past few days that made me see that I've been inhuman. My husband is

dead and I'm afraid I'm next. Tshepo is taking his revenge on us, he said he is saving Tumi and Dubula for last. I know I won't make it past this week so I want you to know that Tumi is your daughter please take care of her and beg Tshepo not to kill her. You can even do paternity tests if you do not believe me. I'm sorry Modiri for everything I did to you and Bree. I was a woman scorned" she says wiping her tears

"Time is up" mr Modiri gets up and leaves with the world on his shoulders.

**BREE** 

I'm meeting Mr Khumalo at Khumalo and associates in parkwood. I need to make sure that I secure custody of Kgatliso legally.

"He's ready for you Miss Modiri" I nod and get up. I walk into the man's office, I was honestly expecting an older mature man maybe my father's age.

"Miss Modiri please take a seat" yep he is young and easy on the eye I must say but I'm not all about that life now.

"Mr Khumalo, thank you for agreeing to meet with me. As I mentioned on the

email I sent. I need to know what my options are regarding my son" he nods

"Miss Modiri because you were away from home and couldn't dispute the annolment, you can ask for it to be cancelled and have a court hearing where you can split things 50/50 since you were married in community of property and your son's custody can be part of the divorce settlement." I shake my head

"I don't want anything, he bought almost everything the only thing I contributed was the furniture of which I'm not interested in. I want to start over and I don't want a long and messy court battle." He nods

"Do you want full custody or joint?" I sigh

"I want full custody but he can have supervised visitation. These are the bruises I found on my son. I took him to

the doctor and here is the medical records." I say handing a file with the pictures I took of Kgatliso's bruises

"Okay I will compile everything that you have told me and serve him. Hopefully we can settle out of court" we wrapped up and I left, as I was waiting for my cab to arrive a car pulled in front of me.

"Hey beautiful, can I give you a ride?" I rolled my eyes

"I'm fine thanks"

"Come on Bree, I just need 5 minutes of your time" I sigh and cancel the ride on my phone. I try to open the door to his car but it's locked. He gets out and comes to open for me

"Don't take away my opportunity to be a gentleman, chivalry is not dead." Kill me now! We ride in silence until I noticed him taking a different direction to my home.

"Where are you taking me?" He smiles

"You'll see" I roll my eyes again and he chuckles. We arrive at botanical gardens, he has the most beautiful picnic set up. He used to take me here in the initial stages of our relationship, he was just a

broken smart but a brutal killer that everyone feared except me and I was just a poor girl trying to pull my family out of porverty.

"What's this Tshepo?" He doesn't say anything, he kills the engine and gets out of the car. He comes to open my side, I wanted to protest but I don't have the energy to argue.

"You look beautiful Mamoletsane" I give him a death stare

"It's Mme Modiri now" he looks down

"I made the biggest mistake of my entire life my love but God knows I searched for you everywhere, I even went bankrupt but Kopano helped me out" I nod

"You went and divorced me without my consent and if when I came back you acted differently and not ran after her maybe I would reconsider forgiving you but you chose her in front of me and your family. Now that you know the truth about her, you want forgiveness? Never!"

"I messed up but Bree you're talking about never forgiving me and you are running to Njabulo's offices like you don't know who your husband is. I'm not giving

up on you, I'll let you cool off and waste money on lawyers and cabs but at the end of the day you know where home is."

I chuckle bitterly

"You don't scare me Tshepo, you don't. I want nothing to do with you. You have proven how weak you are. You allowed yourself to be the Masilos puppet and going on a killing spree won't erase how much of a disappointment you are to me

and my family" he clenches his jaws, I know I've struck a nerve

## TSHEPO MOLETSANE

This is not the sweet little Bree with a small calming voice. She's different, she's insulting me while looking at me straight in the eyes. I don't like this confident Bree. I need to bring back to the polite submissive shy girl I fell in love with.

"You can insult me as much as you want Bree but only death will do us part" she chuckles

"Then get ready to kill me Moletsane because that's the only way you will have me back, over my dead body, Now take me home, I miss my son." She says folding her arms

"What about all this food?" She shrugs

"There are many homeless hungry people in the streets. Give them the food" yoh! I open the door for her and we drive out of the park..! instruct the security who was guarding the set up to eat the food.

"I'll come pick Kgatli up tomorrow" she nods

"I love you" she laughs

"Yeah right! Bye Tshepo." I sigh

I drive home and get busy on my laptop. I move all the money I'm her account and leave her with nothing. Then I make a call.

PHONE CONVO

"Mrs Smith hello"

"Hi it's Tshepo Moletsane, Bree's husband. I need you to cancel the job you are planning to give Bree" she becomes silent

"Are you there?" she clears her throat

"I don't understand, she's starting next month"

"What don't you understand? I know about your dependency on certain xenflex pills now how does that look on a whole chief of staff" she sighs

"I'll let her know that we decided to hire someone else"

"Good girl" I hang up. Bree I'll frustrate you until you come back to me, Now let me go watch live porn.

## **PRETTY**

I'm laying there dead tired. My nuna hurts and don't get me started on my anus. My throat is also sore, once again they leave me paralyzed and smelling of semen. I really can't take it anymore.

"I'm so sorry Tshepo, I regret everything I did please forgive me." He chuckles "This is nothing compared to what's coming to that daughter of yours that looked at me in the eyes and comforted me when I cried for my wife. She deserves far worse than what you're getting now."

"What's more painful and degrading than this? Please my son whatever

punishment you have for her please do it to me and spare her" he laughs

"Aren't we brave? No my darling mother in law. I want to break her soul" he says getting up laughing. It's better I kill myself, this is not life. I can't take it anymore, death seems to be the only way out. I lay there on my bed crying thinking of how I got here.

Mohau Modiri and I were young and in love. I was from a middle upper class

family while he was from a poor family. My father hated him but I didn't care, I was in love and I saw a future with him and I gave him my innocence. My father arranged marriage for me and Thabang. I didn't love him at all but my father beat me up and made me write a letter breaking up with Mohau. I did and the letter was delivered, his friends told me how broken he was. I later found out that I was pregnant and I told my mother. She advised me to pin the pregnancy on Thabang so that night I slept with

Thabang, Mohau saw me months later and I was about to pop. I will never forget the tears he shed. I wanted to tell him that he is the father but I was afraid of my parents disowning me. I gave birth to Boitumelo, when she was just two weeks old I made up mind to go back to Mohau but his aunt stopped me and I've been bitter ever since then. I hated Bree because of how much Mohau loved her. If her mother didn't give birth to her we would have been together at least that's how I viewed it. I made Tumi hate her

own sister and always want to be better that her.

**CHAPTER 9** 

**BREE** 

I can't believe that piece of shit ex husband of mine cleaned out all my money. I don't need a sangoma to tell me that it's him but it's fine. I still have that money that Pablo gave me which is worth 300k in south African Rands. I see, he wants to frustrate me but his plan won't work. My phone rings and I answer immediately

PHONE CONVERSATION

"Hello"

"Hey Bree is Mrs s.. I mean Suzanne"

"Oh hey dear, I wasn't expecting your call this soon but I'm not complaining. I'm ready to dive in." She sighs

"I'm so sorry to be the bearer of bad news but we can no longer give you that vacancy" I frown "May I ask why not?" There's a bit of silence

"The board decided to give the current psychologist a resident position, it was really out of my hands but I'll be happy to write you a recommendation" what a bummer

"It's okay I understand and thank you for letting me know" I say hanging up

because I didn't trust myself to continue talking without breaking down. My father walks into the kitchen looking worse than I feel right now. He really hadn't been himself lately

"O right papa?" He doesn't say anything he is in deep thought

"Papa!" I shout

"Yes pumpkin" I sigh

"Are you okay? You have been off lately" he fakes a smile

"Ke siame ngwanake" I don't buy it but I let him be. I get ready to meet with Shelly and Nosipho.

"Hey friend" I say as I take a sit at spur.

Nosipho hasn't arrived yet so it's just

Shelly and I

"Are you okay?" I don't want to spoil everyone's mood with my problems.

"I'm okay just tired" she nods

"Chomi please don't take offence but are you getting some help, you know some

counselling after what you went through"
I smile

"I long accepted what I went through chomi and beside, my family is all the therapy I need. I'm okay I promise, I have my daily devotions that Nosi gave me and I'm okay. I feel very blessed to be back home so I won't sink into depression when I have so much to be grateful for." She nods, all of a sudden she looks down blushing and I look behind me to see

what's making my girl blush like a school girl.

"Ladies" it's Kopano and Thapelo

"Hi" this hoe next to me suddenly has a small voice. They decide to join us,
Kopano and I sit there awkwardly
watching season 2 of break Shelly's heart.

"Want to get out of here?" Kopano whispers and I nod

"Guys I'm leaving, Kopano is giving me a ride back home" it's like I'm talking to myself. I'll text Nosi and tell her not to bother coming here. We leave the horny duo and get to the car. We ride in silence until he parks at the gate.

"What's bothering you Bree? I can tell something is wrong by how you bite your nails every now and then. It's always been your habit when you're anxious about something" i laugh

"How the hell do you know that?" He shrugs and I sigh

"Your brother is starting to show me flames, he cleared my bank account and I'm not 100 percent sure about this but I think he is behind me losing a job I was promised" he sighs and keeps quiet for a while like he's in deep thought. He then takes out his wallet and takes out an American express card.

"Take this, there's about five million in there. Use it as you see fit, buy a car or a house, pay your attorney fees. Whatever you need it for" my eyes pop

"I can't possibly accept this Kopano, you have already done so much for me and my father. I can't take this" I say pushing the card back to him

"I don't have a child or a wife, I have a lot of money and no one to spend it on. Please accept this, you and your family mean a lot to me and I told you that you will always be family. As your big brother I'm giving you this money because I don't want my little sister to suffer while I have means to help her out" I take the card and throw myself in his arms. I pulled back very fast, that was awkward he didn't even hug back

"I'm sorry" he clears his throat, gosh I'm so embarrassed it's not like I was making a move on him why didn't he hug me back.

"I have to get going" I say avoiding eye contact

"Okay greet your family for me especially my little champ"

"Okay" I climb out of the car so fast and almost falling gosh whats happening to me.

## **KOPANO**

I watch as she awkwardly leave the car.
Why is she acting strange all of a sudden now? I hope me giving her the card doesn't give her any wrong ideas. I just care about her as my little sister and I hate what my brother is doing to her. I

decide to drive to his place and I'm met by a horrible sight. A woman in the kitchen half naked cooking. I shake my head. I really thought he wanted to make things right with Bree.

"Where's Tshepo?" I ask with the most intimidating look and she shivers

"In his s...st..study" I walk past her clicking my tongue

"Tshepo" he look shocked to see me.

"I didn't know you were coming" I shake my head

"What the hell is in your kitchen? I thought you want to fix things with Bree" he sighs

"She's not important I just needed a stress reliever" I chuckle

"You are not acting like a man who wants to fix things with Bree"

"I'm working on it"

"By fucking hoes and emptying her bank account?" He frowns

"Stop your nonsense and act like a man who is sorry and wants to mend his ways

not a tyrant who bullies his way back into her life" he nods

"How is making her lose a job going to fix things? FYI lil bro she knows it's your handy work and she's more determined to move on from you"

"I'll do better abuti" I smile

"Good, you know I want what's best for you." He smiles getting up to walk me out.

## **TSHEPO**

I come back from walking my brother out and throw the glass of whiskey on the wall. How can she run to my brother like that? This is exactly what I mean when I say that she has changed, the Bree I know suffered in silence. She would never tell my family or her family about our problems. I think it's time I intensified the pressure for her to come back to me. In the meantime time. I am still enjoying punishing my mother in law, Dubula is the 26's bitch in prison and I made sure they were denied bail. I'm thinking of a more colourful way to deal with Tumi. Maybe shipping her to China or something and as for Dubula I'm breaking him little by little.

"Hey baby are you coming to bed?" I roll my eyes. I don't even remember her name and she's already picturing herself being Mrs me cooking in Bree's kitchen.

"I'll be there in a moment. I want to find you naked and your legs spread on the bed okay?" She giggle, I take out my phone and call in a favour

PHONE CONVO

"Butcher"

"Tito I need a favour man"

"Anything for you"

"I need you to kidnap my son" he chuckles

"Don't ask, I'll send you all the details"

"Soldier lam" we hang up and I sip on my whiskey.

"Now you will have no choice but to come back to Papa"

## **CHAPTER 10**

My father and Thabiso decided to go to the park with Kgatliso. I decided to take the time to apply for a job at a few hospitals and community centres. I hope something comes up very soon. An SMS from my brother disturbs me and I frown "Come to park lane hospital asap" I run like a headless chicken. I get to the hospital and find my brother in the waiting area.

"What's happening?" He buries his face in his hands

"We were having a great time at the park then out of nowhere a red BMW stopped and tried to take Kgatliso away from dad

but you know how strong and stubborn papa is. He fought with everything in hin. He told me to take Kgatliso and run. I carried Kgatli and ran until I saw a police van. I stopped it and explained what happened. We went back where we left papa and we found him laying in a pool of blood." I feel my whole world spinning. No!

"Where is Kgatli?"

"The nurse took him, he was too shaken by the whole thing" I sank to the floor worried. God please save my father

"Mohau Modiri" the doctor says walking into the waiting room

"Yes doctor, we are his children" he sighs then introduces himself

"We did everything we could but the bullet was shot at a close range, straight to his heart. My condolences" he walks out leaving us crushed beyond repair.

Thabiso sobs silently trying hard not to breakdown while I try to make sense of what is happening.

I went into his ward before they moved him to the mortuary. Oh my hero, he is laying there peacefully and handsomely. My father was literally my hero, the best man I will ever know. He single handedly raised a girl child and I know for certain that I am strong because of him. Now how do I carry on without him, how do I go on without his encouraging words and his prayers? I still wanted to spoil this man rotten. God why so soon? Before he enjoyed the fruits of my labor.

"Papa you saved my son, how do I thank you when you can't even hear me? I promised to take you to Cape town to see the ocean kanti why couldn't you wait for

me. Ntate Modiri oh modimo ke lahlehetswe hle. I love you papa" I say sobbing. My father is gone

I look at Kgatli and wish I was him just for a little while. He doesn't know what's happening, I just told him that grandpa missed Gogo so much that he went up to stay with her in heaven. He understood and even said that grandpa was always

sad, which makes me wonder what was eating papa up so much.

"I'm sorry about your father, I came as soon as I heard. Take heart my friend"
Nosi says hugging me.

"Did the police say anything about the culprits behind this" I shook my head. I wish everyone could just understand that I'm not in the mood to talk.

# **TSHEPO**

"I'm sorry Butcher but that old man was stubborn, he threw some mean punches. I took a gun to scare him but he grabbed it and we wrestled a bit and the gun went off, you know I'm a professional but that old man is a beast" I sigh

"Well that beast is dead. I liked that old man"

"Sorry man, must I still kidnap your boy?"
I shake my head

"Let's wait for the old man to get buried then we'll revisit this conversation" I drove to the Modiri household and walk into the house, Kgatli runs to me

"Daddy!" I look over at Bree and she looks broken.

"Hey boy" I pick him up and play with him a little before heading to Bree.

"Hey" she looks at me and tears roll down her beautiful face. I pull her up hugging her and she cries on my chest

"I'm so sorry baby" I say rubbing her back

"They just shot him like he was nothing" she says on my chest

"It's okay baby" I try to break the hug but she holds on tight and I smirk. Ntate Modiri did not die in vain after all.

"Please don't go" music to my ears

"I'm not going anywhere" she smiles faintly

# **KOPANO**

I got my contact in the hawks to find out who's behind the shooting of Ntate

Modiri. That man was like a father to me.

Even when Bree was kidnapped he didn't shut me out, he was there for me even when my wife died. I'm so hurt by that man's death.

PHONE CONVO

"Kay my man"

"Do you have anything for me?"

"Red BMW was spotted around the area where the shooting took place. I ran the plate and they belong to the gang leader Kgomotjo Mabaso aka Tito. There are no witnesses tying him to the crime so unfortunately no arrests can be made"

"Thank you man, that's all I needed" I hang up the phone and banging the steering wheel. Tshepo has fucken lost his mind.

I walk into the house, the first place I look at is his favourite chair where he would sit and read his newspaper. I catch my brother holding on to Bree, on a normal day I would be happy walking into such a sight but now I'm livid, how cruel is my brother?

"Can I steal him for a minute?" She nods with puffy eyes. I hold her hand as an

assurance that I'll be here for her. Tshepo kisses her forehead

"I'll be back okay baby" Bree nods, she looks broken, numb and even lost.

"You piece of shit, you killed her father then played the hero to her" I say grabbing him by the neck choking him. I squeeze tightly

"Stop it you two!" Thapelo says pulling me away from Tshepo

"What the hell is wrong with you? The Modiris are mourning and you are busy disrespecting this yard. Tshepo is busy coughing catching his breath

"This piece of shit sent Tito to kill Ntate Modiri" Thapelo lands a punch on Tshepo "Get the fuck out of here and never come back here ever again" Thapelo says looking deadly. I know just like me he is fond of the Modiri family.

"I didn't mean to have him killed, I wanted to take Kgatliso, I thought kidnapping him would bring Bree and I back together. I swear I didn't mean for him to die." This is unbelievable

"You are stupid Tshepo, Bree made it seem like you are a responsible grown man but no! You will always be that small minded little boy. We were also molested, we were beaten up too but you don't see us going around and causing havoc just because we think the world owes us. Now get the fuck out of here. If I see you anywhere near Bree trust me little brother I will kill you" Thapelo says already pushing him outside the yard.

CHAPTER 11

**TSHEPO** 

I can't believe my brothers reacted that way. Yes I admit I messed up and got the old man killed but he shouldn't be dying in vain, Bree was leaning on me for support and I know that pretty soon I would have had her back in my bed but no! The noble Moletsane brothers had to rain on my parade. Pretty finally decided to give in and die. She was found in her cell with a sheet around her neck mxm bloody coward. I'm on my way to see my soon to be ex-wife.

"You look like shit" I say as she takes a sit.

"Tshepo" she says tearing up

"Look at what jealousy for your friend landed you"

"I was not jealous of Bree. She didn't deserve you. I'm the one who should be

Mrs Moletsane, I am strong and able to stand the test of time. Do you honestly believe that if one day you had to kill someone that Bree would stand by you?" I chuckle, this bitch is delusional

"You are crazy, who are you to make that decision for me. I love Bree, you had no right to do what you did to us, to Kgatli. We saw the bruises on Kgatli, what kind of monster are you? What you did to my family is unforgivable but worry not Mrs

me. I'm going to break your soul piece by piece baby, ask your poor mother what I did to her until she decided to take her own pathetic life." Her eyes pop then she shakes her head with tears streaming down her face

"Yes lovie" she breaks down crying

"I'm carrying you baby Tshepo you can't harm me"

"Last kick of a dying horse I see" she wipes her tears

"I swear on everything I hold dear, I found out a week ago. I am 9 week pregnant.

You can even request medical records"

she seems serious damnit! I could never

harm her now. I get up and walk out, it's back to the drawing board.

I drive to Tito's and go heavy on the drinking.

"You look like mess" I chuckle

"The bitch wife is pregnant" he whistles

"I was looking forward to tonight since the old lady decided to die" I shake my head

"I'm getting her out of prison but I'm going to keep her locked up somewhere until she gives birth then I'll kill her. Bree and I will raise the baby together"

**BREE** 

Tshepo just disappeared after his brother asked to talk to him, I don't understand why he is not here but I'm not complaining, all my friends and the other brothers are here supporting me. The relatives have started flocking in much to my irritation because they were never here for us when growing up and now they want to control everything.

"Ngwana abuti, I hope you know that this was not your father's house, our parents left it to all of us and now that abuti is not here anymore it's only right that one of us comes to occupy this house. You don't want us to go to kukithi la" my father's drunkard sister says

"Ntswaki maan this is not the time or place to talk about such things, we need to prepare for the funeral" my

grandmother Maleburu says to my so called aunt.

Today is the day of the funeral, I am feeling numb. All I want to do is just disappear and not see all these people around me. Papa I can't believe you left me, I fought to come back only for you to be the one who leaves me.

"Breezy how are you holding up? Eish stupid question I know but ntwana, Kopano and I are here for you. We love you and we will stick by you forever. You are part of us now, on one of my many calls with ntate Modiri when I was still in Switzerland, he made me promise to look after Thabiso if anything were to happen to him. I asked him "what about Bree" he laughed and said that one will find her way home because she is my soldier. She wasn't babied like Thabiso. She took on a role of a mother at age 6, she is

imbokoto" for the first time I smile.

Thapelo has a way of lightening up the mood. He is a straigh talker and has a heart of gold. The jury is still out on Kopano, he is a mystery only Sne understood him.

"Thank you Thapelo" he smiles hugging me. The funeral was just sad and draining, after everything I just want everyone to leave but I know the discussion about the house is underway.

"I don't see why there should be a dispute about who lives here. This house was a small RDP madala house and my brother's daughter renovated it so why don't we just let them be" one of the uncles,

Honestly this is just draining me.

"Renovations or not this is a family house. We didn't ask her to renovate. Our parents left this house to all of us.

Allowing Mohau to stay here with his

them the house. Bree is a married woman, she has a house of her own" this is just too much I'm about to snap

"We are not saying they should move out but all we are saying is that we can also move in. In fact my children and I are moving in. No one can chase us out"

Thabiso and I have been quite the whole time until Thabiso clears his throat

"My father struggled alone as if he never had a family, my sister was kidnapped none of you showed up. My father dies and all of a sudden you are circling around his hard work like vultures. None of you contributed a cent to the funeral arrangements. My father's body hasn't even decayed but you are busy fighting for this house. If it's a family house then why didn't you come claim it when he was alive? I think you said what you needed to say, you saw where your

brother and nephew is buried now all of you leeches get the fuck out" he says storming out

"Your brother is disrespectful, we still need to do a cleansing ceremony. With that attitude who will cleanse him. He can throw as much tentrums as he wants but the fact remains we are not going anywhere" ntswaki says before burping. Thapelo and Kopano walk in

"You have 10 minutes to pack your shit and leave before I decorate these walls with your blood" Kopano says putting a silencer on a gun. I've never seen old people run so fast. Thapelo came and hugged me as I cried in his arms. Will this pain ever go away? I feel like I'm losing my mind.

**BOITUMELO MASILO** 

#### **DFAR TUMI**

MY ONE AND ONLY DAUGHTER, I HAVE FAILED YOU AS A MOTHER. I WAS A BITTER WOMAN AND I RAISED A BITTER WOMAN, MANY YEARS AGO I WAS IN LOVE WITH MOHAU MODIRI BREE'S FATHER. MY PARENTS WERE AGAINST OUR RELATIONSHIP SO THEY ARRANGED FOR ME TO MARRY THE MAN YOU KNOW AS YOUR FATHER THABANG MASILO, BUT

I WAS ALREADY PREGNANT WITH MODIRI'S CHILD. YOU! MY MOTHER MADE ME PIN THE PREGNANCY ON THABANG. WHEN I WENT BACK MODIRI I FOUND OUT HE WAS ALSO MARRIED AND IMPREGNATED BREE'S MOTHER. YOU WERE ONLY TWO WEEKS OLD THEN. I AM SO SORRY I MADE YOU COMPETE AND HATE YOUR SISTER BECAUSE LEFLT THAT SHE RUINED EVERYTHING BY BEING BORN, TSHEPO SENT MEN TO RAPE ME **FVFRY NIGHT IN PRISON SO THAT I** COULD FEEL WHAT YOUR SISTER BREE

WENT THROUGH, I HAVE HAD A LOT OF TIME TO THINK AND I BELIEVE THAT I DESERVED EVERYTHING AND EVEN MORE. I JUST WANT YOU TO LIVE A BETTER LIFE THAN THE ONE I GAVE YOU. THE SCHEMING AND PLOTTING DOESN'T HAVE A GOOD ENDING BABY, CHANGE YOUR WAYS, MENT YOUR RELATIONSHIP WITH BREE. SHE IS HONESTLY A GOOD PERSON, I HOPE ONE DAY YOU BOTH CAN FORGIVE ME. I CAN'T TAKE THE RAPE ANYMORE. I KNOW I'M A COWARD FOR KILLING MYSELF.

### LOVE YOUR MOTHER

# PRETTY MASILO

I fold the letter sobbing. I don't know how to feel right now, so Bree is my sister. My very own blood sister and I destroyed her life, I went after her husband, sold her to human trafficking and abused her son.

How can my mother drop such a bomb

and expect all the feelings of hate and jealousy for Bree to magically disappear just because we are related. I have never felt any remorse for what I did to Bree and now what must I do with this information? I'm carrying Tshepo's child now what am I supposed to do with the competitive nature that she instilled in me? I'm angry, I'm confused most importantly I'm lost.

"Boitumelo Masilo" the guard opens the cell for me. I get up confused

"You are going home dear" home? I don't have a mother, she killed herself. I don't have a father because the man who raised me is not only dead but it turns out he is not my father too. Ntate Modiri never liked me so I know he won't welcome me, I might as well die

# CHAPTER 12

**KOPANO** 

I walk into her office building carrying a Mythos paper bag. She has been working here for a month now after I hooked her up with this job, my idiot brother made sure that she doesn't find work anywhere else but he knows I'm more connected than he is. I knock once and open the door. She looks up and smiles

<sup>&</sup>quot;Hey I hope I'm not disturbing"

"Not at all, I was writing a report but I'm almost done" I stand there awkwardly

"I was in the neighborhood so I thought I could bring you some lunch" I say putting the paper bag on her table

"It's shawarma" she smiles

"Thank you" she says grabbing the bag and opening it.

"First you get me this job and now you bring me lunch, if I didn't know better I'd say you like me Mr Moletsane" I chuckle

"It's a good thing you know better" her face drops

"I have to get going, I'll see you around" she gets up and walks me out.

On my way to the car I saw Tshepo's car parked right across my car. I walk over and tap on his window and he opens the door getting out

"What are you doing here, are you stalking her now?" He chuckles

"Bree is my wife how the fuck am I stalking her when she's mine?"

"You don't listen do you? Leave Bree the fuck alone" I say walking to my car

"You want her for yourself don't you? Is that why you got her this job and bring her lunch, are you two fucking?" I turn around and charge towards him grabbing him by his jacket.

"You don't fuck a woman like Bree, you make love to her and besides I don't see Bree in that way, she's like a little sister to me you moron. You need to grow up and stop acting like a damn psychopath" I say letting him go and getting into my car. Honestly there's something seriously wrong with this boy.

## **BREE**

Yoh! Kopano is something else but I appreciate him and Thapelo so much. They have been there for me. There was a time I was getting depressed from not getting a job but Kopano pulled some strings and got me a job at the SA army as the in house psychologist and I couldn't be happier. Well I could if I could get

justice for what happened to my father. The police still have no suspects yet which is frustrating. I have lost all hope in the South Africa justice system I mean Tumi's case was thrown out of court due to lack of evidence. I thought she would have come to gloat by now but nobody knows where she is, it's like she disappeared, I hope she stays wherever she is and never comes back. It's knock off time and I'm heading to the parking lot. I bought myself a BMW M3 with the money

Kopano gave, he insisted I buy a car before starting work.

You know that feeling you get when someone is watching you? Well I'm getting the same vibe, I look around but I don't see anyone. I unlock the door and get into the car as quickly as possible and drive off.

"Sh don't scream" I look through the mirror and it's none other than Tshepo

my ex husband. This guy has been AWOL since my father's death.

"Are you out of your mind?" I stayed calm and drove to the nearby park and parked the car

"There was no other way I had to do this in order to see you. Thapelo and Kopano threatened me not to see you or reach out to you.." I frown

"Why?" He sighs

"Because they found out I was getting Tumi out of prison" I chuckle

"So you are the reason why Tumi is out of prison?" Wow I should have known

"I am but for a very good reason. Tumi is pregnant with by child, she's about to give birth. I didn't want my child to be born in prison and I wanted to make sure that the baby gets the best anti natal treatment, then when the baby is born you and I could raise it together. Give me another chance Bree. You, me Kgatli and the new baby could start afresh on a clean slate. I don't even mind killing Tumi after she gives birth to show that that I don't want her I did this for us. Please give us a chance baby, you once loved me at some point and I know feelings don't just magically disappear because you're angry" I sigh

"You hurt me Tshepo" he opens the door and comes to the front seat

"I know baby and I paid a heavy price for it. These past few months have been hell without you." He cups my face and plants a peck on my lips

"I love you, I have never stopped loving you. I just made horrible mistakes please baby one last chance I beg you" he kisses my teary eyes

"I don't know, what if you hurt me again"

"I won't I swear I won't" I sigh

"Can you give me time to think about it?"
He smiles

"As long as it's not a no then take all the time you need" I look into his eyes and smile

"Where's Tumi now? Are you two still together? Because I won't share you Tshepo" he chuckles

"She's at a friend's place. Theres nothing going on between us I swear" I nod

"I'll think about it Tshepo, give me time and space please" he nods

"Can I at least kiss you?" I nod. We kiss for a while before breaking the kiss. He has that goofy smile of his that made me fall in love with him.

#### **TSHEPO**

She drove me back to the parking lot and I got into my car and drove off in a jovial mood. That went better that I expected but there's only one problem "my brothers" if they reveal to her that I'm behind Ntate Modiri's death, I will definitely lose her forever and that is not an option. I can't have them killed, I love

my brothers although they behave as if they are perfect. Kopano is worse than me. He just knows how to hide his secrets better than me and Thapelo is not the saint he portrays himself to be. He buys companies under false pretences and destroys them piece by piece selling them in pieces until there's nothing left before moving on to the next, he brought down many big companies. Nobody knows his real identity until it's too late. Whoever he is working for knows how to cover and protect him. I walk into the house I

bought to keep Tumi locked up in until she gives birth. It's a single story 3 bedroom house in Ridgeway. She's in the kitchen cooking, she's wearing my t-shirt and she's walking barefoot. She looks cute with her big bump, this pregnancy is loving her. I watch her as she sings and dance like all is well in the world

"Oh hi!" She greets shyly

"Smells good in here, what are you making?"

"Pap and beef stew. Want me to dish up for you?" I nod with a smile

"You look happy" she says taking out the plates

"I am, Bree might just give me a chance" I see a hint of pain but I don't care. I made it clear to her that she's as good as our surrogate.

"How is she after our f...I mean after Ntate Modiri's death?"

"She's seems fine. My brothers are always there for her which is good. Today I made

a little progress with her. She allowed me to kiss her" she fakes a smile.

"Here, I enjoy I'm going to take a bath" she says placing a plate next to me

" Aren't you joining me" she shakes her head

"I'm not hugry yet" I nod

"Well when you're done bathing, don't fall asleep and don't put anything on I'm coming to give my baby some vitamin D."

I say with a smirk and she nods

## **BOITUMELO**

Tshepo is a dog, the past few months has been hell. It's safe to say that I hate the

bastard. He has sex with me whenever he feels like but doesn't allow me to reach an orgasm. He sometimes brings his friends so that I could give them blow jobs. I feel so dirty and cheap. I can't wait to give birth and leave this place. He can take his child and raise it with Bree I really don't care. I just want to be faraway for him. I can't believe that Tshepo had this evil side to him. The things he did to my mother. That bastard made a tape and made me watch it. My mother suffered, I really don't blame her for taking her life. I take a

bath dreading what's about to come but I do not have a choice. He comes in as I put lotion on

"Let me help you with that" I hand him the lotion.

"Tonight I'm in a good mood, I just might let you cum. Would you like that?" I fake a smile and nod

"Come on, you can do better that that"
he rubs my clit with his thumb and I
become wet instantly I swear it's his child
because as for me, he repulses me

"You are so wet, get on the bed and spread your legs wide." I do as told and he takes off his clothes and gets between my thighs. He takes to muff town and I cream his face.

"You taste good" he comes up and without warning slams into me hard and

fast busy shouting Bree's name. Sigh! At least I get to come this time around

**CHAPTER 13** 

**TSHEPO** 

I woke up to a message from Bree, I'm telling you I'm smiling like a retard "LET'S HAVE DINNER TONIGHT 7PM AT CUBANA SOUTH GATE, MEET YOU THERE" what a way to start my Friday morning. I look over at Tumi and she's fast asleep. I climb on top of her parting her legs and I insert my manhood inside her. I don't know whether it is the pregnancy or what but her pussy is on fire. After satisfying myself I take a bath and send my brothers a message asking them to meet.

I get to lifestyle car wash and I spot my brothers already sitting down with a meat platter and beers

"Bo Moletsane" I greet and they greet me back. I take a beer from the ice bucket and down it at one go

"Why are we here?" Thapelo asks annoyed

"Thank you for coming bros, I just wanted to let you know that Bree and I are getting back together and I would very much appreciate it if you don't mention the unfortunate accident that led to my father in law's untimely death" Thapelo scoffs

"Are you hearing yourself? What did I say to you about staying away from Bree" this one thinks I'm afraid of him

"I can't do that, I love Bree and I will never give up on her. She wants me back please don't stand in my way or I'll forget that you are my brothers" Kopano is quiet staring at me intensely this whole time.

"You know better than to threaten us"
Thapelo again, I think he's the one who
wants to fuck Bree

"I said my piece" I say getting up and taking another bottle of beer before leaving them speechless.

**THAPELO** 

I watch as Kopano clench his jaw. He is pissed and he's trying calm himself down.

"What's the plan?" He downs his beer

"There is no plan, I cannot make plans against my brother" I chuckle

"You and your mother are the reason why Tshepo is like this. After everything you

did to get Bree out of Mexico, you going to let your stupid brother destroy her. You know that piece of shit brother of yours doesn't love her. He is busy with that bitch Tumi." He gets up and places few notes on the table

"Leave Bree to fix things with her husband. If that's what they both want" he says leaving me dumbstruck I know for a fact that Kopano has feelings for Bree but he won't admit it to himself.

# **BREE**

"Are you sure it's going to work?" I sigh

"I hope so, that man is complicated. I don't know how many hints I've thrown his way but dololo" Nosi, Shelly and I are at spur having lunch.

"Don't you think perhaps he is still mourning his wife" Nosi asks

"Well I guess his reaction about me going back to Tshepo will determine everything"

"But girl that's a dangerous game you are playing, pretending to fix things with Tshepo just to get Kopano's attention.

What if Tshepo takes you seriously?" I shrug

В

"Tshepo is just delusional if he thinks I'll forgive him and after he told me that he is having a baby with Tumi and he helped her escape justice I just knew that I'm completely done with him"

"I just hope your plan doesn't backfire" I hope so too "Let me leave you ladies. I need to go prepare for my date" I say winking. On my way home I text Kopano asking him to babysit Kgatli for me because I'm going on a date with his brother. He replied back with a "ok" which was disappointing but hopefully I'll get a better reaction face to face.

"Thank you for coming" I say as soon as he enters, his eyes are fixated on my body huging sequence mini black mini dress.

My bloody and curves are out to play tonight. I'm loving how he's not even looking at me on my face.

"I've already cooked, please make sure he doesn't trick you into giving him some ice cream" he nods wow! He doesn't look bothered at all. I take my hand bag as I'm about to leave he stops me

"Why are you taking him back after everything he did to you?" Because you don't want me

"He's the father of my son" he chuckles

"That can't be the only reason. Kgatli has great male role models in his life. You can do better than Tshepo, he is my brother I

love him but he is not the right person for you" he says calmly

"Well it's my bad then it's not like someone better is stepping up. I have to get going."

"You are not leaving this house Bree" I frown

"Why?"

"Because I say so" I chuckle

"Are you aware that Tshepo and I were married and we have a son together?"

"My word is final Bree"

"Why don't you want me to go out with your brother?" I half shout

"Tell me damnit, give me a good reason why!" He clenches his jaws

"Whatever!" I say walking towards the door but he is quick to grab my arm and not so gentle.

"What the hell are you doing, get your hands off me, my man is waiting for me" he groans

"HE IS RESPONSIBLE FOR YOUR FATHER'S DEATH DAMNIT!!!" He roars

"What?" I ask in a whisper

"He killed my father and you knew and never told me?" He keeps quiet and I chuckle

"You are truly your brother's keeper, here I am thinking you would say you don't want me to go out with him because you have feelings for me kanti nix, all these kind gestures, the lunches, the job it's because of pity because your brother killed my father? I hate all of you, you are a bunch of evil tractors."

"Bree.... I"

"SHUT THE FUCK UP!!!" I shout wiping my tears

"Get out" he sighs

"I hate you all of you Moletsane brothers are evil and cruel. You watched me cry my lungs out" I'm a crying mess. He tries to touch me but I move back

"Out!!!!" He looks at me for some time then walks out. I sink to the floor and wail.

Tshepo has been calling non , I sent a him a message saying I can't make it.

After putting Kgatli to sleep I scratch through my bags and I find Pablo's business card. It's time I called in a favour, Tshepo and his brothers are going to pay.

**CHAPTER 14** 

**BREE** 

I spoke to Pablo and told him about my ex husband and his brothers, he told me that he will fix it but didn't tell me how. I just hope he shoots them dead all of them. I called Shelly and Nosipho over and I'm crying my eyes out to them

"I hear you chomi and I'm sorry for what Tshepo did to you and your brother, ntate Modiri was like a father to all of us but chomi don't you think you are being too harsh on Kopano and Thapelo? Those two have been there for you even when you were not around. Thapelo single handedly took Thabiso to varsity and even now he is still paying for his fees and don't get me started on k...." I raise my hand indicating that she should shut up

"Of course you will take their side akere wena Shelly you are dickmatized" she chuckles

"This anger of yours towards Kopano is not about them covering up for their brother because deep down you know they did that to protect you, this is all about Kopano not feeling the same way about you. You expected him to profess his undying love to you but instead he told you about his dick head of a brother being responsible for your father's death. Your damn ego is bruised now you are

taking it out on everyone." Shelly says and I get angry

"Get out" she chuckles and takes her bag, I look over at Nosi

"You too, follow your friend. I'm hurting about my father's death and the father of my son being responsible for it but all you came here to do is to insult me" Nosi

shakes her head and gets up grabbing her bag too

"I'll pray for you" Nosi says following her flat ass friend. I hate to admit it but Shelly is right, my ego is bruised. My phone rings It's that murderer Tshepo

\*\*\*\*\*\*\*PHONE CONVO\*\*\*\*\*\*\*

"Hello"

"My love are you okay? Why did you cancel our plans, I was looking forward to being with you" I chuckle

"Tshepo I need you to hear me and hear me well because this is the last time I'll ever talk to you or my name is not Breeseas Modiri. Karma is coming your way, you and that pregnant bitch will feel

my wrath. You must have thought I'm stupid neh that I would ever consider getting back together again after what you did. I don't know which drug you are smoking but leave it my dear. You will never know peace for killing my father" I hang up the phone breathing heavily

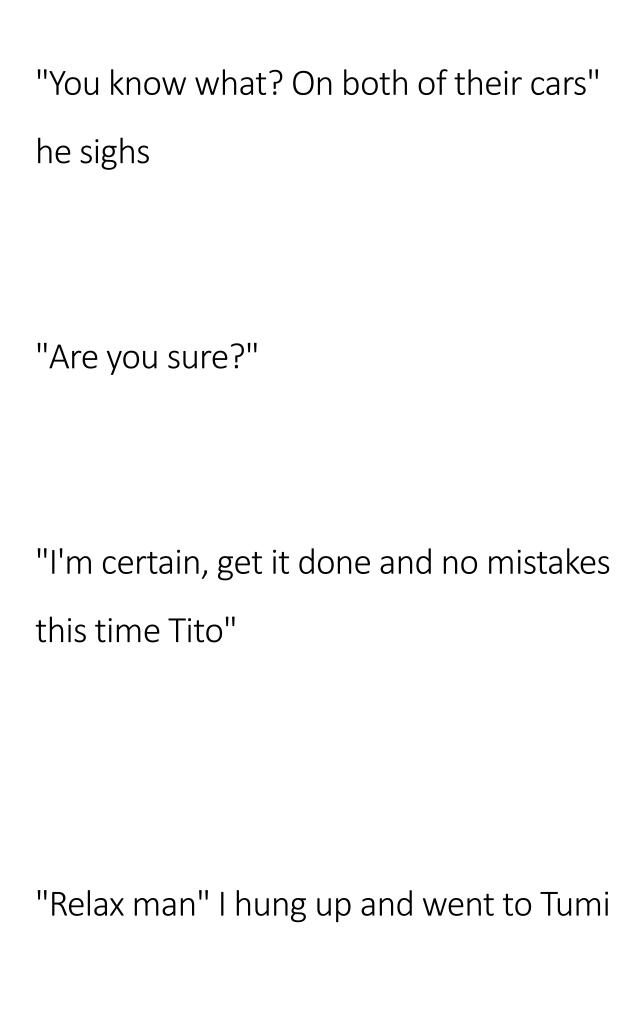
TSHEPO MOLETSANE

I throw my phone against the wall and it breaks to pieces. I can't believe my brothers can be so evil. They know how much getting back with Bree means to me and they do this. The fucken gloves are off now, brother or not I'm going to kill anyone that gets in my way of me being with Bree. I take out my phone and call Tito

"Butcher"

"Can you organise someone to cut the brakes on my brother's car"

"Which one?"



"That friend of yours is full of shit, she found out that I was the reason behind Ntate Modiri's death and now she's threatening me" I say chuckling

"You killed my father?" I frown

"Your father?" She sobs and throws herself on the couch

"Tshepo you took everything away from me, the man I thought was my father, my mother and now you are telling me that you are responsible for ntate Modiri's death. I didn't even get the chance to tell him that I'm his daughter too. I hate you, you are going to die a painful death" I smirk

"So you sold your own sister to prostitution and I'm the cruel one wow, thanks for the information. You just saved your life because I was going to kill you right after giving birth but now darling you are very useful collateral"

I decided to go see Thapelo, one of my guys told me he's on a date with that flat ass friend of Bree that I never liked.

"Moletsane" I say walking up to their table. He nods and I look over at his bitch

"Shelly"

"Tshepo" she says not even looking at me

"So you two are a thing now?" My brother shakes his head

"Is the Masilo girl's borehole boring you now? Fuck off Tshepo" I chuckle

"Is that why you were so quick to run to Bree and tell her about her father's death, is Shelly's flat ass not satisfying you anymore?" he gets up and throws a mean punch at me

"We're done Tshepo you hear me? You are no brother of mine

"Watch your back big brother" I say wiping the blood on my busted lip. I know he will be dining with the devil in hell by tonight.

**KOPANO** 

After the altercation I had with Bree I decided to drive to the cemetery to visit my wife's grave. Sne was my life and she always knew what to say to make everything make sense.

After spending some time at her grave I hopped back into my car with a heavy heart. It kills me that she can't answer me back. I have these strong feelings for Bree and I feel guilty about having them when I

promised that I will love her and no one else. This whole thing is just messing me up, my thoughts are distributed by a call coming through, judging by the number on the screen it is an international call I decided to park on the side of the road and answer.

"Ola Shadow" I frown

"Pablo?" He chuckles

"I'm being summoned to South Africa"

"By who"

"Lupita" I shake my head

"I thought our agreement was that you get her from the Santos brothers and I help you kill them, I don't understand why does she have your numbers" this old man better not fuck with me

"I know but she saved my life, she didn't know that I actually took her from the Santos brothers to save her, those bastards send her to kill me but she chose to run instead. She said I reminded her of her father. You know how much I value loyalty, I told her that if ever she needed my help she should call me"

"Well she doesn't need your help, I'll handle my brother" he sighs

"Señor Shadow, you know I respect you and your work ethic but I am very fond of Lupita and if she is unhappy then I'm unhappy. I don't mind turning that country red to ease her stress, fix it" shit!

"I hope that's not a threat Pablo but trust me I too am very fond of my sister in law, I will fix" "Si" he says hanging up and I bang the steering wheel as if that's not enough stress another call comes through

"Boss your brother Thapelo was involved in an accident with his girlfriend" what is this now?

"Is he okay?"

"He is in a coma and his girlfriend died on the spot" I close my eyes, this is fucked up, just when he was trying the relationship thing with Shelly

"Okay man, I'll meet you at the clinic" he sighs

"What is it?"

"I suspected foul play so I did some digging, your brother's accident was no accident at all, his brakes were tempered with." Can this day get any worse

"Find out whose behind this attack and get bodyguards to guard his ward. No one comes in or out except me and the doctors"

"On it" I hang up this is just a nightmare, who would dare touch my brother? I need to let Tshepo know.

**CHAPTER 15** 

\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*One Week Later\*\*\*\*\*\*

**KOPANO** 

"Steve"

"Boss" I stumped on the cigarette I've been smoking. I'm not much of a smoker but when I'm stressed I can even finish a pack. Tomorrow is Shelly's funeral, Thapelo is still in a coma, Tshepo is not answering my calls. We are at my ranch in Krugersdorp and Steve has four guys tied to chairs in the basement. They are allegedly behind the tempering of my brother's brakes. We walk in and I must say I don't recognise all four of them.

"My brother is in the hospital, I have to drive 3 hours back to jozi where I have to go to a funeral. I really don't have all day so please gentlemen, start talking" they all laugh at me like I'm talking shit. I take out my gun put a silencer on. I shot two guys between the eyes and the two other men went dead silent.

"Can we try this again, I don't have time to torture you."

"We have nothing to say to you, rather kill us" I chuckle. I really am not in the mood for this.

"Steve please get my tool box"

I've been at it for a while, I took out all their teeth and cut their finger but these bastards are not badging. "You are true soldiers. I must say, I'm impressed, but let's see how strong you are when I bring your families to join the party. Now I'm all fired up." Steve brought two children wearing school uniform.

"Hello kids, say hello to daddy." The other guy sobs as soon as he saw his children especially with all the blood he has around him and the tears they were shedding

"Please my man not my children"

"Why not? My brother is in a coma, it's only fair I put one or both your children in a coma too then we will be even." I took out a hammer in my tool box and walked towards the kids

"Please don't do this" I turn to face him

"It's already done boy" I get to the kids and lift the hammer up as they scream hidding their face "stop!"

I stop bringing the hammer down

"Yes?"

"I'll talk, I....we work for Tito, Butcher your brother asked us to cut both your

brother and your car's brakes but we couldn't find you that evening. We were able to cut your brother's brakes." At that moment I felt my world caving in on me, my own brother? I walked out and got into my car. I don't know where I'm going but I just want to wake up from this nightmare. I have to kill my own brother, the one that I practically raised.

I ended up going to the hospital to see my brother. I greet the guard outside the

door and I'm welcomed by Tshepo fiddling with Thapelo's drip. He became jumpy as soon as he saw me, he tries to downplay it but it's too late.

## **TSHEPO**

"Your brother is in a coma but his medi is in hell" I chuckle, I'm at Tito's place and we are discussing how to now kill my big brother Kopano.

"Your guys did an excellent job, it's a pity that they couldn't find Kopano but don't worry I'll think of something." Tito nods

"What about your other brother? He might wake up from the coma and I hear security is tight at the hospital"

"I'm family, I'll be allowed in. I just need something a can inject him with something that will kill him"

"Don't worry Zen has something she can give you" I drive to the hospital and sure thing the security guards didn't give me a problem apparently I am on the visitor's list.

He looks so pale, not so cocky and arrogant anymore. Just because he works for a faceless man he thinks he is above everyone. He had to have a smart mouth but it's okay we will meet in hell

"Give my regards to your rapist father in hell" I say taking out the syringe. As I'm about to inject through the drip, the door opens and I drop the syringe. It's none other than my big brother.

"What are you doing here?" I try to play it cool

"I came to see my brother, what else could I be doing here" he nods and walks towards the bed making it difficult to pick up the syringe.

"I don't like how things are between us, the three Moletsane musketeers.

Thapelo's accident showed me that life is too short. Tshepo you are my little brother and I love you. This fight between us is not good" I just nod not even listening to half of the shit he's saying.

After leaving I decided to drive to my house to take a shower, thank godness I was able to pick up the syringe without my brother noticing. My phone rings at first I ignore it but whoever is calling is persistent

"Hello" I here somene sniffing

"Hello Tshepo it's Zen" why is she calling me? I'm not interested in being a referee if they're fighting

"Yes Zen, what can I do for you?"

"Tito has been kidnapped. Men carrying guns came and took him in front of me

and the kids." I wonder who has the guts to kidnap a whole gang leader.

"I'll get one of the guys to track him. I know it's hard but just try to remain calm for the sake of the kids okay, I will find him" she sighs

"Thanks you" she says before hanging.

## **BREE**

I can't believe how short life is. We get into arguments with our loved ones and sometimes stay angry at them for longer than necessary because you tell yourself that my anger is justified so I'll prove a point until I calm down not knowing that tomorrow is not promised to anyone. Today is Shelly's funeral, the way we left things between us haunts me, everything she said was true but I was just too angry to admit it, I banked on tomorrow to fix things but little did I know that "Get out" were my very last words to her.

"Don't do this to yourself Bree" Nosi says hugging me

"I'm such a horrible friend" I say sobbing

"Friends fight all the time, Shelly knew that you love her and that you were talking from a place of hurt the last time we spoke. We were actually planning to come see you again once you have calmed down." I hug her and cry on her shoulders

The rest of the funeral was so sad, all her learners from the school she taught at said such wonderful things about her. Her parents are broken especially because she

bid farewell to them that fateful day promising to see them later, little did they know that it was the very last time seeing her.

I spot Kopano and his cousin Sputla, I decide to go greet them

"Hi" I say

"Ngwetsi ya lapeng" Sputla says and I fake a smile. I look over at Kopano

"Can I have a word with you?" He nods and we both move to my car

"I'm sorry for my outburst the other day. I know you and Thapelo only wanted to protect me" I say looking everywhere else except for his eyes

"It's okay, anyone would have reacted that way but just know that ntate Modiri was our father too"

"I know" there was awkward silence

"Oh how's Thapelo doing? I tried to visit but I was not allowed in inside"

"I'll put your name in the visitors list" I smiled

"Thank you."

After the awkward moment with Kopano I decided to drive back home. When I go

to the house I found the house empty. I asked our neighbour Lebo to look after Kgatliso.

"Hey is Lebo and Kgatli here?" I ask as soon as she opens the door

"Hey Bree, I asked Lebo to go buy veggies for me. As for Kgatli, his father came to fetch him. He said he will call you. I felt my knees get weak, that bastard took my son without my consent.

CHAPTER 16

**TSHEPO** 

My phone has been ringing off the hook since I decided to take my son, good thing I found him with a babysitter. I brought him toy house in Winchester hills, I didn't want to take him to Tumi because she might abuse my son again.

"When are we going home daddy" he's been pestering me about his mother "Boy, don't you want mommy and I to live together in the same house?"

"I do daddy" I smile

"You have to tell mommy that you don't want to go back to that small house and that you want her to come live with us here in this big house"

"Okay daddy"

"I'm calling mommy now okay? I want you to tell her what we just talked about" he nods

"You better bring my son back if you know what's good for you" that's how she answers the phone

"You mean, our son and besides I have every right to take him to spend time with me"

"I want your murdering ass to bring my son back before I lose it." Isn't she cute

"Someone wants to talk to you" I gave
Kgatli the phone and put the phone on
speaker

hello mommy

"Hey baby, mommy misses you so much"

"I miss you too but I don't want to come back there" that's my boy

"Why! Don't you miss mommy?"

"I do mommy but I want to stay in a big house with you and daddy like other children. Mommy please come stay with daddy and I" she became quite and I spoke

"I am willing to forget and forgive all the insults and take you back for the sake of our boy, I'm sure you can look past my mistakes too" she didn't say anything else she just hung up the phone.

"You did very well son, I'm proud of you now mommy has no choice but to come back to us."

Later in the day I drove to the warehouse, the men were restless and none of them had any idea what happened to they're leader.

"As you all know Tito was taken by men we don't know but trust me I am working hard to find out who is behind this and when I catch them they will beg me to kill them. In the meantime I will step in as the

leader only until Tito comes back. I am sure by now other gangs have heard about Tito being AWOL and are gunning for his territory. That will not happen under my watch. Tshepo Moletsane is taking a backseat and the era of the butcher has just begun. Any questions?" Some coloured guy spoke

"What makes you think that we will listen to you? How do we know you are the one responsible for his disappearence?" Within a split second I threw a butcher knife at him and it went straight to his skull. He dropped dead there and then

"Any more questions?" Everyone shook their head. "Now go back to work" everyone left and I sat down at the office wrecking my brains trying to figure out who's behind this.

## **KOPANO**

"You and my brother have the guts to want to kill us, do you have any idea who you are messing with?" I have Tito tied up to the chair. He has an annoying smug look on his face.

"You and Thapelo are nothing, Tshepo is going to kill you and there's nothing you

can do about it. He is called Butcher for a reason" I laugh

"Talk about the blind leading the blind,
Tshepo is a scared little boy who plays
with knives to make himself seem scary."
He chuckles

"Is that why he fucked your late wife right under your nose?" I took a hammer and

smashed his knee while he was screaming.

"You don't fucken talk about my wife" he laughs through the pain busy cussing

"I still masturbate to the sex tape they made, your wife was damn flexible. My boy fucked her in the kitchen while you and Bree were watching TV. Butcher is a

legend" he laughs some more and I smash the other knee

"I have the video in my phone, the password is tito145b" I switch on his phone and go to videos, this son of a bitch has so much porn on his phone

"It's under file name "butcher the legend"
I check it out and there it is. My wife Sne
moaning as Tshepo rams into her. I watch

the 10 minute long video with so much confusion

"You know Tshepo is behind your brother laying in hospital but he's not here. Why? Because you are afraid of him. I bet you won't do shit to him. You are weak, you couldn't even satisfy your wife" I couldn't listen to this bastard anymore. I poured petrol on him and lit him up. I watched as he went up in smoke screaming.

I knocked and she opened her face went from surprised to concerned, my eyes are red. I drove around until I found myself parked outside her home.

"Kopano, are you okay?" I don't say anything I just kiss her hungryly, she is taken by surprise but welcomes my lips. I take off my clothes she's also helping me take them off, we are completely naked I look into her eyes

"You are so beautiful, please allow me to fuck you hard" she swallows then nods I place her on the kitchen counter and she opens her legs wide. I'm not about to do foreplay I just want to fuck, I rub my member against her entrence and babygirl is already wet for me. Without warning I slam into her fucking her brains out. She moans and screams my name as I destroy her pussy.

## **BREE**

I don't know when or how I got to my bedroom but I'm in bed feeling like a train just hit me. My poor nuna is in pain. Kopano fucked me thoroughly and I enjoyed every minute of it. He did things to me that were out of this world. I really lost count of how many times I came. I am alone in bed, it stings to think that he fucked me then left without saying a word. I get up and take a long bath, soothing my burning pussy. I make my

way to the kitchen and I'm met but a sticky note on the fridge

"Thank you for last night, I had to rush out Thapelo is awake. See you later" I read the note a couple of times, don't ask me why. I don't want to put my hopes up because it might be a once off thing. Maybe he was too stressed and needed to release but ke I don't regret anything. I am happy he chose me to fuck. I'm sounding desperate I know but I have

fallen in love with this man. After I spoke to my son I was in such a foul mood, how can Tshepo be so heartless. I know he put that idea into Kgatli's mind. He was happy in this small house. I really don't get it. He's using our son now. I need another lawyer because that one is on first name basis with Tshepo and I can't risk losing my son.

Chapter 17

**THAPELO** 

He walks in looking like he is the world on his shoulders. I have been awake for a few hours now, I'm surprised to see guards outside my door meaning that someone is behind my brakes failing. I just hope Shelly is okay.

"You look like shit" he says taking a seat

"I just came out of a coma, what's your excuse for looking like that" he chuckles

"Your little brother" I sigh

"What has he done this time?" He chuckles

"What hasn't he done Thapelo? That brother of yours is pushing me" he sounds pained, this must be serious

"He's behind your accident. He got his gang members to temper with the brakes." Why am I not surprised

"We had an altercation that evening before the accident. He had a smug look nje I should have known he was up to something"

"Yeah man, Shelly didn't make it" I close my eyes letting the words sink in

"I'm so sorry, I know you were trying things out with her" I nod

"If you can't kill Tshepo it's fine with me but let me do it" he shakes his head "You know I found him here trying to finish you off, I swear there's something seriously wrong with that boy. I made a promise to myself to protect him and give him the love he never got from our father but now he's gone too far." He chuckles

"Did you know that he was sleeping with Sne" my eyes pop "Tshepo is sick, he wants you to lose your mind. There's no way Sne could have done such a thing, that woman loved you." He chuckles

"Well she did, they even have a sex tape. Sne was sleeping with Tshepo right under my nose, I was a fool in love" no way! Sne and Tshepo? My brother is a dog

"Let me kill him" he shakes his head.

"No one is killing him. I want to teach that boy a lesson, I kept him away from my life and my kind of job because I thought I was protecting him instead he went and joined a gang now he will know who his real brother is and what I'm capable of. I want to render him useless, by the time I'm done with him he will beg me to kill him" he says clenching his jaws and I know that Tshepo is doomed.

## **BREE**

I hope I will be allowed in this time, I cooked samp and oxtail stew. I know some home cooked meal will lift his mood. I found a lawyer who is willing to help me with my son but he advised me to try to negotiate with Tshepo and his lawyer first before dragging the case to

court. I know Tshepo is stubborn as hell but it's worth a try because I am honestly in no mood for a nasty court battle. Thank God I'm allowed in, I push the door and walk in. My eyes land on Kopano and the events of last night come flooding in.

"Hello" I greet looking everywhere else except for Kopano, I knew he might be here but I was not prepared to see him so soon

"Breezy, how are you?" Thapelo asks smiling

"I should be asking you that question, I brought you this" I say handing him the tupperware. He opens it and the smell of good food fills the room.

"You are a God sent" I giggle

"Where is the little champ?" I sigh

"Tshepo took him without my consent and has influenced him to refuse to come live with me because apparently my house is too small I should come to the big house and live with him and daddy" Thapelo clicks his tongue. This whole time brothers haven't said anything, he's just staring at me mute and it's damn uncomfortable.

"I need to get going, I promised Nosi to come see her. I'm glad you are awake and I'm sorry for your loss. Shelly was truly in love with you" he nods

"Thanks for the food" Kopano clears his throat

"I'll walk you out" I nod

"How are you" he asks as soon as we get to the parking lot.

"I'm okay" he nods

"About last night" I know he's going to break my heart, I already feel a lump forming in my throat.

"I was in a bad space, I was hurting and I needed someone to be there for me and I want to thank you for that. I like you very much Bree but I'm not in a good space for a relationship right now. I don't want to hurt you and if me coming to you last night hurt you then I'm so sorry it wasn't my intention. You are a beautiful woman and I'm sure you will find a good man who will be able to love you the right way" I nod and fake a smile but inside my heart is in pieces

"I will get Kgatli back and I will arrange security guards for you guys." I nod again I don't trust my voice

"Okay then I'll bring him later this evening" I smile getting inside the car and I wave goodbye. As soon as he is out of sight, I let the tears roll down my eyes. I feel like my heart has been stabbed. I

think it's time I get over this silly little crush and move on with my life.

## **KOPANO**

I watched as she drove off, she tried to cover the hurt up but she failed dismally because it was evident in her eyes. She looked broken but I did the right thing, I cannot love her completely while still harbouring these unresolved issues I have

with Sne and I don't want to take it out of her, Bree is a beautiful kind hearted woman who deserves to be loved right not the shit I did last night. I decided to drive to Tshepo's house to fetch Kgatli.

"Big brother" a picture of him fucking my wife comes to my mind and I clench my jaws

"Boy, go to your room I need to talk to your father." He runs off and as soon as he is out of sight, I punch my brother so hard breaking his nose. Then I grab him by the throat, he tries to stab me but I grabbed the hand holding the knife and twisted it until the knife fell. All this while my other hand is still choking him.

"I'm taking the boy, from today you and I are done, you have no idea who I am but it's fine, you will soon find out. By the

time I'm done with you Tshepo, death will seem like a vacation. Ever wondered how all your gang related cases magically disappeared, it wasn't luck little brother, it was Shadow and he is coming for you" I say letting him go. I left him there coughing like hell and went to fetch Kgatli in his room.

After taking Kgatli out for Ice cream I went to Bree's place and as soon as she opened the door I could tell she was

crying. Her eyes were puffy and red, the sight alone made my heart aches. She smiled as soon as she saw Kgatli standing next to me.

"Hello boy" she said already hugging him. She opens the door wide but I stay rooted at the entrance

"I just came to drop him off, don't be alarmed when you see men hovering

around you it's for your protection. Your personal guard will be here in the morning. She will be staying here, she can even crash on the couch. She will be with you everywhere you go I explained the situation to your bosses." She frowns

"Is all that necessary?" I sigh

"The same man who had your father killed is the same man who killed Shelly

and almost killed Thapelo so yeah all this is necessary" her eyes pop, I bid farewell and leave

I'm sitting comfortably on my office chair at my house in study, I'm looking at my wedding pictures, was I really that blind? Didn't I make her happy? I don't get I really don't understand. I take a phone and call my contact at the hawks

"Monna Kopano"

"Miles"

"I need every cold case on my brother

Tshepo to be opened again. I want you to
freeze his account pending investigation"
he chuckles

"Finally! That brother of yours has been doing as he pleases in my town"

"Don't arrest him yet, I have plenty of plans for him"

"Consider it done Kopano but you do know he has offshore accounts" "I'm working on that too, he'll be so desperate for money that he'll be planning ATM bombings"

"After all the protection you have afforded him, he shits on you. I wonder what did he do to you"

"Something unforgivable and it's good I was protecting him in the shadows now

he will know not to mess with me" we say our goodbyes and hung up.

## **TSHEPO**

Who the fuck does Kopano think he is strangling me like that. He just signed his bloody death warrant I swear I'm going to kill him and who the fuck is that shadow that he's talking about? He thinks he has friends in high places well I have the

Khumalos on my side, the biggest and the baddest in the whole of mzansi.

"Mr Khumalo will now see you" the cute receptionist says and I wink at her as I walk into Khumalo's office

"Njabulo" he gets up and gives me a bro hug

"Butcher" I chuckle and take a seat

"What brings you here, I lost 200k because of you" I laugh

"But you shouldn't have given her false hope, you are my lawyer mos conflict of interest" he laughs

"What can I do for you man?"

"I'm going into war with my brothers and I need a team on my side" he chuckles

"A team for a lousy Kopano and pretty boy Thapelo, come on man" I sigh

"He hinted that he had an alliance with someone named Shadow" his eyes pop

"Impossible!" I frown

"Do you know him?"

"Know him? Dude that guy is either a myth or a legend. He is said to control who gets elected in this country. He owns big international companies around the world, no one has seen his face but presidents globally have dined with him. He controls both the underworld and the day to day running of a small country like south Africa. If your brother is truly

friends with shadow then you my friend are fucked"

**CHAPTER 18** 

True to his word my yard is full of men in black walking around the yard. Kgatli is so amused by them he even got them to play soccer with him. There are 3 guys in total, I am just waiting for my so-called personal guard to arrive. Regarding the Kopano issue, I cried and I cried until I couldn't cry no more. That was me mourning a relationship that never saw

the light of day. I am done and I'm moving on with my life.

I'm getting ready to go to work. Two guards will be going with Kgatliso to day care while two guards will be with me the whole day. A tall, lean lady walks in wearing all black, you can tell that she works out, she didn't even knock. I'm busy feeding Kgatli his breakfast.

"Hi I'm Jade your personal bodyguard. I need to sweep this whole place for bugs before we can leave for work"

"What's up with the body guard?" That's my colleague Phil. The Jade woman is camping outside my door with a earpiece. It's quite obvious that she's a bodyguard

"Long story, what can I do for you?" He takes a seat

"Please allow me to take you out for dinner just this once and I promise you to stop pestering you if you want nothing to do with me after the dinner please" yeah Phil has been asking me out since the very first time he saw me but I was so hung up on Kopano. He's not bad looking, he is tall and very dark skinned African brothers from Ghana, He is the army's in house attorney.

"Okay" he looks surprised by my answer. I am trying so hard to move on, I know I'm using the poor guy to forget about Kopano but who knows, he might just sweep me off my feet and we end up getting married.

"I'll pick you up tonight at 7pm" I shake my head

"We will meet there" he nods

"I'll send you the address and thank you for making my day" I smile at him as he exits my office.

I buried myself with work though out the day until it was knock off time. I've never been this happy to be driven around, I need a long bubble bath before going on my date with Phil.

This guy booked an entire restaurant. There's just a table for two right in the middle. He's wearing his army uniform. I don't know why but I guess he wanted to give me the whole "man in a uniform" vibe. I'm wearing a black pencil skirt and a formal royal blue blouse with exaggerated sleeves, black open toe 6 inch heels and a bob weave.

"You look beautiful" he says handing me a bouquet of flowers.

"You look very handsome too" he smiles opening the seat for me. Gentleman? Check.

The entire evening was all about getting to know each other, he is also a divorcee, he has two children and has been in South Africa for more than 20 years. He is

38 years old and he owns a couple of restaurants including this one. Apart from being an attorney, he is a foodie.

"I had such a great time, getting to know you away from the workplace has been nothing short of amazing" he says smiling. I don't know if it's the wine talking but the guy has a beautiful smile. He's not Kopano's handsome but he's good looking as well. Why am I comparing them? Kopano has been living rent free in

my mind but after tonight, I'm certain that I'm a step closer to forgetting about him

"Who is he?" I looked up and I didn't realize that I zoned out, I just smiled not knowing what to say

"I don't know what is happening between you and the other guy, I don't want to replace him but I do however want a

chance to get to know and hopefully build something solid with you. I promise I won't break your heart, I will love you and take care of you. I'm old, I don't have time for games and I will not share you with anyone. Tell me here and now if I stand a chance or not, If I'm not an ideal man for you then I will leave you in peace and settle for a good working relationship but if you are willing to give us a try I promise you will never regret it" he does seem like a nice guy, a relationship with Kopano was never going to work anyway, he is my

ex's brother for crying out loud. Sne was perfect and he's still in love with her, how do I compete with a ghost. Yes he is doing all these nice things for me but he made it clear that I should find someone else. I too deserve to be happy and this man is bringing all the things I want to the table. he is mature and seems very much loving. I have nothing to lose

"I will give us a chance" I say in a whisper, he captures my lips before I could register

what is happening he is already
deepening the kiss. I pull back and smile
at him sweetly

"I'm sorry if I'm coming on too strong but I've been wanting to do that since the first time I laid my eyes on you." I'm speechless all of a sudden all I'm doing is smiling and nodding.

He opens the door for me and perks my lips before closing it. Jade is the one driving me, she's not much of a talker this one but the way she's looking at me it's like she wants to say something.

## TSHEPO MOLETSANE

Tumi is in labour, I am rushing her to hospital. I can't believe the moment I've

been waiting for has finally arrived, I was going to get rid of her as soon after giving birth but now that she is BREE'S half sister. Since my attempt to bring Bree home failed because of my big brother, using her as bait when the time is right will be a good move. We arrive at florah clinic and I open a file while the nurses are busy with her.

"Sir your medical aid funds are exhausted" I frown, how? Because I

hardly use it. I take out my card to pay cash, I'll fix the medical aid thing with my HR department tomorrow

"Sir your card is declining"

"Now that's impossible, there's something wrong with your system. I go to my banking app on my phone and I'm shocked to find that the money is there but I can't use it because my accounts are frozen.

"Mr Moletsane" a male voice behind me and I turn to look who it is.

"I'm detective Peterson from the hawks you are needed down at the station for questioning concerning a couple of ATM bombings and heists dating back to 6 years ago" this can't be happening

"Mr Peterson, my wife is in labour, she needs me here. She has no one except for me" he nods

"Relax Mr Moletsane, you are not under arrest yet but make sure as soon as you are sorted here you give me a call on this number or you can go to your nearest police station and ask them to get hold of me" he says handing me his card and walking away

"Sir the payment or you can take your wife to a free hospital. The nearest hospitals are Helen Joseph memorial hospital or leratong hospital" I give her a death stare and take out an American express card I know the funds are not frozen because it's under Tumi's name. It doesn't have a lot of money, I think there's a little over a million there but it will do until I sort this mess out.

"Try this one" it goes through and they attend to Tumi. These private hospitals are savage, they don't care about turning you back if you can't pay.

Tumi gave birth to a baby girl, I told them to discharge them first thing in the morning because I don't have money to waste. They charge for everything. Even the hot water you used for taking a bath.

I drove straight to Njabulo's office from the hospital. I'm stressed and I don't know what to make of the hawks visit.

"Miles Peterson is a big shot in the hawks, he deals with big fishes like government corruption cases, why would he be in charge of small gang cold cases. You my friend are under Shadow's radar" so Kopano has something to do with this

"All my accounts are frozen including the offshore accounts. Each and everyone of them, the business funds, medical aid funds everything. I was able to pay the hospital bill using a card I opened under Tumi's name."

"I will come with you to the station as your lawyer but you have serious problems and I'm afraid this is just the beginning" I rub my head frustrated

## **KOPANO**

"So are you okay with her being with another man?"

"Stop annoying me Thapelo, I told you I am not in a good space to start anything with Bree" he chuckles

"Then why the hell did you sleep with her?" I shrug

"You and Tshepo are the same" I grab him by the throat

"You don't dare compare me to that piece of shit, I love Bree enough to let her go because I don't want the wound Sne and Tshepo caused to bleed on her okay. Bree

deserves a good man and I'm not that man." I let him go and he coughs

"I understand all that kopano but don't you think that she's what you need to heal? If you can watch her be happy with another man then fine I just hope you won't regret it" I scoff and focus on my laptop

"What's next?"

"His businesses, get Lisa on board as a potential investor"

"Why Lisa and not Blake?"

"Because your brother has a weakness for pussy" he laughs

"I really wanted Tumi to give birth in the car on her way to a government hospital" of course he did

"Well seems your brother has a lot of cards up his sleeves but worry not I already cleaned that card he's using now. After he paid the hospital bill he was left with a little over 800k but it's gone now. As we are working on his company the Houses will be taken too" Thapelo beams I guess he is over the urge to kill him

CHAPTER 19

\*\*\*\*A month later\*\*\*\*

**TSHEPO** 

My life is a mess, Kopano and his shadow guy are really messing my life up. With all my accounts being frozen, the asset forfeiture unit sold all my houses and my expensive cars. Tumi and my daughter Bontle had to move to the Masilo household. I have been staying at Tito's house and his blood wife is milking my situation by demanding sex every night. I have to close my eyes and imagine myself fucking Bree before I can get turned on. This is just fucked up, the company has

been losing a lot of clients because someone leaked the information about me being investigated by the hawks, but all is not lost. I am meeting a potential client today who wants to invest in my business, this came at the right time because I'm broke now, I'm even driving a Toyota fortuner from a jaguar to a damn Toyota.

"Boss, the men are hungry, we have families to feed. We need to work" I nod,

maybe planning a heist or two is not such a bad idea. The men need money, I need the money.

"I understand and soon we will be swimming in cash, I am working on some jobs" his face beams and he nods leaving. I rub my face frustrated. Tito was the one who was good with planning missions but I'm not about to look like I'm in over my head in front of these guys.

I drove down to my office to meet the potential investor. I had to let go of my p.a to save on costs. The receptionist now has double the work load but with no increase. The company is going down, at the rate we are losing clients in, we will be closing in two years time.

A drop dead gorgeous coloured woman with a freaking hot body walks in. I try to keep it cool but Moletsane has a mind of

his own, now how the hell do I get up to shake her hand when I have a boner.

"Mr Moletsane, I'm Lisa Campbell from Campbell and associates." I get up and walk towards her, her eyes land on my big bulge and she swallows hard trying to compose herself. We shake hands and I ask her to take a seat. I clear my throat

<sup>&</sup>quot;Thank you Mrs C....."

"It's Miss" is she hinting that she's not married?

"My apologies Miss Campbell. My company is more than an accounting firm it is also a consulting firm, we give our customers risk management insurance as well. When our clients bring their business to us, they get all in one tailored service. We audit, we insure your business and we also consult which is

why the business has been thriving for years"

"Until now" she interjects, I sigh!

"Yes until now, Miss Campbell I am a young black successful business man and I have a lot of rivals as expected. Not everyone is happy about my success hence they are dragging my name through the mud, I need you to invest in my company because when all this smear

campaign against me dies down, I will be on top of my game again and your investment will see great returns." She looks at me for some time like she's thinking

"We can't take such a huge risk, on my way here I have been looking at the reviews from you former clients. They are pulling out and the ones who are still with you is because of the contracts that are binding but trust me they are looking for

Ioopholes so that they can walk away.

From where I'm standing if we invest in your company we need something big to sweeten the deal"

"What did you have in mind" she smiles

"100 million for 80 perfect of the company" that's insane

"That's daylight robbery" she nods

"Well in that case let's not waste each other's time" she gets up

"Have a lovely day Mr Moletsane" she was about to reach the door

"Wait!"

"200 million for 51percent" she chuckles

"120 million for 70 percent and that's my final offer" after all the work I put in this company I will not watch it fail

"Deal"

"My lawyer will draw up a contract and you can have your lawyer look at it" I nod

"How about some drinks later on to celebrate our new partnership"

"Sure why not" she walks back in and settles on the same chair, crossing her long yellow sexy legs.

**BOITUMELO MASILO** 

I thank God that I gave birth and I am still alive to be with my daughter. We are not doing well financially but it's okay. After they threw us out of the house Tshepo bought just to keep me hostage I decided to come back home. Tshepo comes once in a while. My daughter is now a month old and I just love her. Motherhood has honestly changed me, all that matters now is to bring up my daughter in a loving home, I don't have any support whatsoever it's just me and my daughter, I tried to reach out to Nosi but she flat out told me never to call her again. I was sad to learn about the passing of Shelly but I know she too was going to refuse taking my calls. Shelly called a spade a spade and that's what I will miss about her the most.

I decided to strap Bontle on my back and walked to Bree's home. When I got there I was asked a lot of questions by security. I wonder why all the security guards, I was finally allowed to go inside.

"You have some nerve showing your face here after everything you did to me Mrs fixer" that's the first thing Bree says to me when she opens the door.

"Can I come in please" she looks at me for a while before letting me inside. "This place hasn't changed much" I say looking around

"Spare me the chit chat and tell me what the fuck do you want" I sigh

"I'm sorry" she burst out laughing

"Are you serious Tumi, how's that going to get back the four years of my life that I lost?" I sigh

"I was jealous of you, my mother always wanted me to better than you. I know it's no excuse but I'm really sorry" she chuckles

"I can't stand you Tumi, you said your piece now leave" I take out the letter that

my mother wrote to me and I give it to her

"What's this?" She says opening it

"It's a suicide note from my mother please read it. She opens the letter and reads it. She wipes her tears

"What kind of sick joke is this?" I wipe my tears

"It's true, ntate Modiri was my father too, I am your sister" she chuckles

"Get out!" She screams, Bontle gets startled and starts crying.

"I can never undo what I did to you Bree but I swear on my daughter's life I regret it" she buries her face in her hands sobbing

"Do you regret it because I'm your supposed sister or because what you did was generally wrong" I look down

"I regret it because I'm a mother now, I can't imagine my daughter going through

what I did to you maybe I needed to have a girl child to have a heart. We can have a DNA test if you think I'm lying or maybe it's another one of my mother's games I don't know. I just want to make things right"

"I don't want to know if you are my sister or not because it won't make a difference about how I feel about you. I want nothing to do with you, I hate you for

what I went through in Mexico." I nod and leave, I really don't blame her.

## **BREE**

As soon as she closed the door I burst into tears. She has no idea of how she and her family broke me. Four years of my life spent with big filthy mexican men on top of me day and night. I have dealt with the trauma of what I went through but seeing the likes of Tumi really takes

me back to what I've been through. I know I sound bitter but I want nothing to do with her. She hurt me deeply when I loved her so much, it's funny how what she did to me actually liberated me from the marriage I had with Tshepo but to me she will always be that friend who stole my destiny.

After crying my eyes out, Thapelo came to fetch Kgatli because I'm having my first sleep over at my boyfriend's place. Phil is

an amazing guy, he is just the sweetest thing ever. Although I am not in love with him yet but it's safe to say that I like him and respect him very much.

"You look beautiful" he says taking my weekender

"Smells nice in here" I say planting a kiss on his cheek, he's wearing a vest and joggers. I've never seen him this relaxed

He made grilled chicken breast, a creamy mushroom sauce and roasted potatoes.

The chicken tastes a bit off but I don't want to offend him so I forced myself to eat it until my stomach couldn't take it anymore and rejected it. I started gagging and I ran to the bin, I vomited everything.

"Are you okay?" He says rubbing my back

"Yeah it's the chicken, it doesn't taste right" he frowns

"The chicken is perfect, if I didn't know better I'd say you are pregnant" I burst out laughing "It's a good thing, you Mr Phil Kelewele haven't planted your seed yet so you know better" he smiles

**KOPANO** 

"You should see the glow Bree has, soldier boy must be feeding her with lots of vitamin D" I scoff

"I think I should send you to China for a couple of years just to get you off my hair. Life was peaceful when you were in Switzerland" he chuckles

"I'm not going anywhere until I see the end for our dear brother"

"Lisa?" He chuckles

"Your flirt of a brother is on a date with her as we speak" I chuckle

"I can't wait for him to sign over 70 percent of his company for nothing" yep

we will send him the money then a day later the money will disappear. Then we will break his company and sell it piece by piece as he watches

"I hear that Khumalo boy has been sniffing around, fishing for information on Shadow" I chuckle

"Let them, as long as they stay out of my way" my phone beeps, it's Jade sending

me pictures of Bree and her boyfriend at his house.

"I knew it bothered you, now you are sending Jade to stalk them" this idiot says peeping on my phone screen.

**CHAPTER 20** 

TSHEPO MOLETSANE

I remove the bed cover and head to the shower. I used my last money to book into

a hotel after the drinks we had last night.

Damn! This Lisa woman is a freak, the things she did to me last night were nothing short of incredible, I think this woman did acrobats in her past life because wow! I come out of the shower and find an empty bed with a note

"Thanks for last night, I'll be in touch concerning the contract"

I sigh, I guess no morning glory for me. I checkout and rush to the warehouse. One

of the gang members asked to meet up with me, I'm already bored because I know it's about their hungry families as if I don't have problems of my own.

"Thank you for coming boss" I nod and take a seat

"I thought since Tito is still missing I should take initiative to be helpful around here, I know it can't be easy leading a

gang while working a full time job." I give him the "go on" look

"There's a job we can pull that will guarantee us 15 million each, it's a 6 man job meaning we are talking about 90 mil" I sit up, that gets my attention

"Tell me everything" he goes on telling me about a secret safe that has that

amount of money owned by a ruthless drug lord from Nigeria.

"So are you sure this guy can be trusted?"
He has an inside guy working as the head
of security.

"We go way back, he already gave me the house plan of where the money is located and when is the best time to pull the job

off." This is very risky and very dangerous but I look forward to doing the job.

While driving to Tumi's place I got an SMS from Lisa telling me that the contract is ready and that we should meet tomorrow. Excitement just overwhelmed me, this deal will catapult my life right back to what it used to be and I will be able to bribe the hawks to get out of my

way. Did Kopano really think that he can take me out that easily?

"Hello my angel, I say kissing my daughter.

Tumi looks older than her age, life has been tough for her. The glamorous madam looks down and out, not forgetting the baby fat really did a number on her, she is now shapeless and fat.

"Bontle's nappies and formula are running out" I chuckle

"I don't have money, doesn't she get a child support grant?" She shakes her head

"Well it's about time you apply for it, you know things are tough for me now" she nods without protest, wow poverty has made her humble. The Tumi I know would have caused a scene.

"When last did you see Bree" she looks down and shrugs, I gave her R300 and she thanked me. I kiss my daughter biding farewell. I decided to drive around Bree's street and I see Kgatli playing soccer with guys wearing black and White I assume they are his bodyguards. I sit there and watch him play so carefree and happy. I really miss my son

I'm meeting Nosi for lunch we haven't spoken much since the fall out we had a couple of months ago. I saw her briefly at Shelly's funeral but we were just too sad to have a proper conversation, I haven't been feeling well since I ate the rotten chicken at Phil's place the other night but I really want to catch up with Nosi.

"Hey beautiful" Nosi says taking a sit at roccomamas.

"Mamoruti" she giggles

"Firstly I'd like to apologize for our last encounter, I was hurting and out of line I'm sorry" she takes both my hands

"We've been friends for a long time Bree, we are bound to push eachother's buttons from time to time but we will always make up because we fight from a place of love right?" I nod

"I miss Shelly so much."

"Yeah I miss her too, so what is this glow that I'm seeing?" I blush

"I have a boyfriend now" she squills causing attention to our table

"Nosi maan" she giggles

"Tell me everything" I go on to tell her about Phil and how much of a great guy he is.

"So is he packing" I giggle

"He's alright nothing compared to Ko...I mean my ex-husband but he is sweet and considerate. I was feeling squimish the entire weekend but he didn't put pressure on me to have sex but yesterday before I left I felt bad so I gave him the cookie" she smiles

<sup>&</sup>quot;Does he make you happy?" I sigh

"He's safe, he's consistent and he shows me everyday that he loves me.

Sometimes the fireworks and the butterflies are just theatrics but true love is found in those quiet boring places." She nods

"Look at you chomi, you married a pastor but you used to love bad boys, you went for a safer option" she shakes her head

"6 years ago I was in your shoes, the man that I loved was busy with his own things not interested in a relationship with me at all so in came Tokelo, a safe bet. He ticked all the right boxes and he married me. To tell you the truth, I wasn't in love with him but I told myself that I will learn to love him. To hell with the butterflies and fireworks right?" I nod

"Well 6 years later I'm still not in love with him, I'm bored as hell and I am having an

affair with the man I truly love." My eyes pop and she smiles faintly

"It kills me everytime when I go home knowing that I just had mind blowing sex with another man who is not my husband. I thought I could learn to love him, I swear I tried to fake it but still the love I have for Stanley consumes me" to say that I'm shocked is an understatement. I don't know what to say, I never ever thought that Nosi could

ever do that to Tokelo hle but I'm not one to judge.

"I'm telling you this because I don't want you to wake up 5 years later and realize that you made a mistake. I wish I waited for Stanley because he didn't say that he doesn't love me but he just said he was not in a good place to start a relationship with me, because I was impatient and all my friends were getting married I didn't care that he was dealing with some stuff." Yoh I suddenly feel sick, I get up and rush to the ladies. There goes my entire meal.

"Are you okay miss Modiri?" Jade asks as I come out of the toilets. I nod and walk towards the table feeling light headed.

**KOPANO** 

\*\*\*\*\*\*PHONE CONVO\*\*\*\*\*\*

"Jade"

"Sir, boss lady has been rushed to the hospital" I get on my feet

"Is she okay? What happened?" The panick in my voice can't be missed causing Thapelo to stop what he's doing and focus on me

"She fainted while having lunch with her friend, they're taking her to Sandton clinic"

"Okay thanks for letting me know, I'll be there just now" I say hanging up already grabbing the keys. Thapelo comes running behind me

"Would you slow down and tell me what the matter is! Is everything okay?" I slow down and pinch the bridge of my nose "Bree is in hospital she fainted" he nods and we get into the car, drive out in silence

"Slow down bro, I'm sure her boyfriend is by her side comforting her now" I give him a death stare and he chuckles

We get to the hospital and Jade meets us half way. She shows us the ward. The door is slightly open and I hear Nosipho

and Bree talking. Thapelo and I stand at the door eavesdropping on their conversation

"I thought you said you slept with him for the first time yesterday so how are you 5 weeks pregnant" Nosi asks

"I kind of slept with someone else a week before I started dating him. Oh my gosh this can't be happening, how am I going to look at Phil after this" Thapelo and I look at each other, I see a slight smirk on Thapelo's face. Someone clears his throat behind us and it's the boyfriend carrying flowers

"Hi are you guys going in?" I nodded and I push the door open. The three of us walk in and Bree's eyes pop when she sees all of us

"Hey baby, I came as soon as I could" the boyfriend says planting a kiss on Bree's cheek. She fakes a smile and waves at us. Thapelo waves back but I just stare at her. She looks everywhere else except my way.

"Did the doctor tell you what's wrong?"
She shakes her head

"How are you feeling Breezy?" Thapelo asks, tension is so thick

"Can I have a moment alone with Bree please, everyone out" I say with a straight face. The boyfriend frowns

Nosi and Thapelo leaves but the boyfriend is not moving an inch

"Bree tell your boyfriend to excuse us, I need to have a word with you" Bree opens her mouth but shuts it as she sees the look on her boyfriend's face. I chuckle

"Let me rephrase then, boy give me and the mother of my child some space" I say with a smirk and I watch as he turns to look at Bree and she just sobs.

## CHAPTER 21

**BREE** 

He looks at me for some time, he looks hurt and I don't blame him but I didn't cheat on him nor did I keep this pregnancy a secret. I just found out about it and this idiot couldn't wait to blurt it out. I watch as he walks out slamming the poor door and I turn to look at the smug son of a bitch next to me

<sup>&</sup>quot;Really Kopano?" He shrugs

"You had no right to speak to my boyfriend like that, you made it clear that you don't want me and now you and your crazy sperm decided to ruin everything for me" I say shedding tears, he walks closer to me and tries to touch me but I'm quick to slap his hand.

"Don't touch me, get out!" He frowns

"I'm not going anywhere, we need to talk about my baby" I scoff

"There's nothing to talk about, get out! If I decide to keep this baby then we can talk about co-parenting when it's born"

"If you decide to keep the baby! What the hell does that mean? Bree don't drive me crazy please." I chuckle bitterly

"Why are you here? Just because I'm pregnant you think you can control me, you Moletsane men are full of yourselves and yes! If I decide to keep this baby because this is my body and my decision. You made it clear that you want nothing to do with me after planting your stupid seed in me" I say breathing heavily

"You have every right to be angry at me but please calm down for the sake of our

baby, I don't want you stressing him or her out." He sighs

"I feel like I need to explain myself but I'm not good with feelings and dealing with emotions." He takes a seat and rubs his hands together and swallows. His Adam's apple moves up and down as he's trying to talk. I think this is the first time I've seen Kopano being human.

"The night I came to your house I had just found out that Tshepo was sleeping with my late wife Sne right under our noses.

They even made a sex tape together and it was circulating amongst his gang friends while I was busy protecting him and rooting for him" he says sounding pained.

I scoff

"You mean to tell me that you fucked me because my ex husband was sleeping with your beloved Sne? Was it revenge

Kopano, is that why you had the audacity to tell me you don't want me, you wanted to gloat to Tshepo? Oh my God!" I bury my face in my hands

"That's not true Bree, I have loved you from the very first time I laid my eyes on you when my brother introduced you to the family but I didn't allow myself to indulge in those feelings. I was with Sne already and God knows I loved that woman but there was just something

special about you. I loved my brother Tshepo and I wanted him to be happy after what he went through. You were good for him, I just couldn't go there. That night when I found out about their affair. I felt like I lost two people whom I sacrificed everything for. I drove around until I found myself parked at your house. I don't regret that night because I followed my heart but what I regret was how I fucked you without emotions when you deserve to be worshiped and

handled with care and love." I don't know what to say right now.

"I...uhm...we" he touches my hand and I stop stuttering

"Look I know that I am messed up and that I have messed up. My life is a mess right now, I'm at war with my little brother. I know I have no right to ask you

this but please don't kill my baby" I wasn't planning on terminating the pregnancy anyway, I just said that out of anger so I just nod

"And please don't confuse my child by having sex with another man, if you get horny during this pregnancy just call me the father of your baby and I'll be more than happy to scratch your itch plus I heard that pregnant women love sex" my mouth hangs open

"Close your mouth you don't want flies to get in. I mean it Bree keep that crooked dick out of my child's home please. You don't want me to kill the poor guy right?" I frown and right then the doctor walks in rescues me from this awkward conversation with this bully.

"Miss Modiri, your blood pressure seems to be fine, I prescribed some vitamins and other pills to help with the vomiting also try ginger tea which also helps with nausea. The discharge forms are at the front desk and please take care of yourself and the little one." I nod getting out of bed. The doctor leaves and I was about to grab the flowers but Mr got to them first and threw them in the bin while holding me as if I'm crippled. This is going to be a long pregnancy.

### PHIL KELEWELE

I am pissed, I had my suspicions when she vomited at my place talking about rotten chicken, deep down I just knew that she's pregnant but I had hoped that I was wrong and the bloody guy was smug about it. If he thinks this pregnancy is going to make me leave Bree then he has another thing coming. I love that woman,

I have plans for us and I even told my kids about her. There's no way in hell I'm letting her go. I decide to send her a text message

\*\*\*\*\*\*\*TEXT CONVO\*\*\*\*\*

"Hey baby, we need to talk but I'll see you tomorrow for now you need to rest"

"Hey, yeah and I'm so sorry about today, I will explain everything tomorrow. I hope you have a good night"

"Goodnight beautiful I love you so much"

She doesn't reply to my last message but it's okay. She has never uttered the three words yet but I know deep down she feels something strong for me.

The next morning I pass by her favourite coffee shop and I buy honey nut latte and blueberries muffins. I get to her office and Mr muscle already beat me to it, he is sitting on top of her desk while she's eating whatever it is in a Mugg and bean paper bag.

"Oh hi there Mr soldier, I thought I should bring my baby some breakfast, Bree I'll see you at lunch, he winks at her and walks up to me me. "Is that coffee?" He takes the cup from my hand

"Coffee is bad for my baby soldier boy" he walk out while sipping on the coffee. This guy is going to be a problem. I look at Bree and she looks down.

"Phil, I'm really sorry about this. I swear I didn't know about the pregnancy when

we decided to date. I didn't cheat on you nor did I hide the pregnancy" I walk up to her and I pull her into a hug

"I love you so much and I don't want to lose you but baby you need to set boundaries, he can't just come in and out as he pleases. I'm willing to accept you and the baby but I won't take kindly to disrespect. Get him in line please," she pulls out

"You still want to be with me even though I'm carrying another man's child?" I peck her lips

"I meant it when I said I love you. I hope you are not planning to leave me because I already told my kids about you. I'm not letting you go and if it's him you love then you best learn to love me too because I am not going anywhere" I peck her lips and walk out.

### TSHEPO MOLETSANE

Today I'm meeting with Lisa and I asked Njabulo to be present so that he can go through the contract.

I'm happy that finally, I'll be getting the money that I need to move out of Tito's house and his wife's smelly pussy will be

nothing but a distant memory. I still want to do the job with razor, 15 million is a lot of money.

"Did you find anything out about shadow"
I ask Njabulo, we are at my office waiting
for Lisa.

"No man, everyone we ask doesn't know him but know of him, I'm starting to the the guy is a myth"

"But how do you explain all the things that happened to me, the hawks?" He shrugs

"What if your brother is the Shadow" I think for a second then we burst out laughing

"Nah, Kopano is too weak and damn noble for his own good. I know kopano is rich but he doesn't have that much influence" he nods

"What does your brother do anyway?" I shrug

"You mean you have no idea how he makes his money?" I shake my head

"He disappeared when he was 19 years old and came back rich when he was 26. He said he was out of the country. I didn't care to ask him what he did to get rich but all I know is that he still travels."

"And Thapelo?"

"He works for some guy but he's too secretive about it, apparently he can't be known because of the work they do" he

nods looking like he's deep in thought.

Lisa walks in looking sexier than the last time I saw her. After introducing the two we get down to business

"Everything looks in order" Njabulo says after going through the contract. I take a pen and sign away 70 percent of my business.

"You can expect your money in an hour or two. It was very nice doing business with you" she says getting up and stretching her hand out for a hand shake

"It has been a pleasure" I say kissing her hand. An hour later the money was paid into the business account. I pay Njabulo for his services and we go our separate ways. I decided to go to Tito's house and pack all my clothes, I'll sleep at the hotel tonight.

"Where do you think you're going?" I roll my eyes, Tito's wife thinks she owns me

"Away from your smelly pussy" I say leaving her dumbstruck.

I drive to the hotel, I make a quick stop and fill up the tank then make my way to the four seasons hotel westclif. "I'm sorry sir but your card is declining" I frown

"It must be your machine, I just paid with it at the petrol station" she tries again but it declines again. What the hell is this now

## **CHAPTER 22**

# **BOITUMELO MASILO**

I decided to go to church with my daughter, at least I will be around people.

It gets boring in that house alone with no friends or family members. Everyone in my family has turned their backs on me, I couldn't even claim my father's pension money because apparently he left it to his sister's children. I guess he suspected that I'm not his daughter. I'm just grateful that the house belonged to my mother and she left it to me. This is Pastor Tokelo's church, he is Nosi's husband. He is such a powerful anointing man of Go.

"Don't let the devil preach to you brethren. Don't let him play a movie of your life with your past mistakes. Don't let the devil take you down memory lane, showing you all the bad you have done. Ladies and gentlemen when Jesus Christ died he took all the sins, all the shame and all the guilt with him. Yes you made mistakes but you have been forgiven. God has wiped the slate clean now all you have to do is to forgive yourself. Some of you say: "Pastor I apologized but they don't want to forgive me" that's none of

your business if they forgive you or not, your business is to work on yourself and let God do the rest. He died for you to live a guilt free life. You have acknowledged your mistakes and you have asked for forgiveness now let go and let God take care of the rest. Praise and worship I need a song" the praise and worship team starts singing

"If you have a dark past, if you have done things in your past that have brought

shame to you. You realized your mistakes and you asked for forgiveness but for some reason the devil keeps preaching to you, he keeps reminding you of your past. The guilt is still fresh in your mind just come to the front and let us pray with you, if you're tired of living life in guilt well my brother my sister you have come to the right place, Jesus says that I have paid the price for you. I have carried the shame so that you don't have to. Come to the front my sister my brother so that we can pray with you" tears blind my vision,

this sermon feels like it was directed to me. With Bontle strapped to my back I make my way forward to the altar and I just cry as the pastor lays his hands on me.

"Hey" Nosi greets awkwardly as the church service ended, I was about to walk out.

"Hi" I greet with a smile

"Is this little Tshepo?" I nod and uncover Bontle so that she can see her

"Aw! She's so beautiful, just like mommy"
I smile. There's awkward silence for a
while

"It was good seeing you, I hope I will see you next week again"

"Of course, the church service was amazing. I feel lighter and happier, you are in deed blessed to have such a powerful man of God as a husband." She rolls her eyes

"Don't tell me you want him too" I look down and the stupid tears fill my eyes "I guess I deserve that, I should get going now before bontle gets cranky. I hope you have a lovely day" I say walking away. I see what the devil is trying to do but I will not allow him to preach my past to me.

**BREE** 

He walks in carrying steers paper bag. He places it on the table and sits on the vacant chair. As much as I believe that he is genuinely happy about this pregnancy being that it's his first child and all but I also can't help but feel that he's also doing this to piss Phil off.

"Thanks"I say already opening the paper bag and indulging. "Look, Kopano we need to talk" he frowns

"I don't like how you disrespect my boyfriend in front of me. This coming and going needs to come to an end. You and I are not in a relationship, we just happen to be sharing a baby. I will tell you when is the next doctor's appointment" he gets up and walks towards me then bends, he's now inches away from my face. I can smell his intoxicating cologne and his warm breath. My breathing changes and

the damn butterflies in my stomach come out to play

"Is that you or him?" He asks in a low deep voice, sending shivers down my spine

"It's me" I say in a whisper he looks at my lips, brushing them with his thumb, mean while my heart is beating out of my chest. I close my eyes and wait for the much anticipated kiss but nothing, I open my

eyes and find the smug bastard moved from my face and is standing at a distance, looking at me with a smirk.

"Tell soldier boy to not send a woman to do a man's job, how can I take you seriously when you cross your legs everytime I enter the room. Why don't you just spare the poor guy's feelings and let him go" I look around for something to hit him with

"Get out" I say throwing a stabler, Luckily he ducks it and lifts his hands up in surrender

"I'll see you tonight for dinner and tomorrow morning for breakfast and any other time I feel like seeing you." He says walking out and I feel tears prick through my eyes. It's official I hate Kopano.

"Did you tell him" he barges into my office without knocking, I get irritated because this is becoming a habit of his

"I did" I say focusing on my laptop

"I have a patient in 5 minutes time is there anything else?" I say not even looking at him and he chuckles "You better have told Mr muscle man to stay in his lane. I told you that I don't take kindly to disrespect, let me leave you. I'll see you tonight, pack an overnight bag because you'll be sleeping at my place"I frown

"It's during the week, I have a son in case you forgot. No sleepovers during the week" he chuckles

"I don't remember asking, bring the boy.

We will drop him off at school in the morning" with that said, he walks away.

I'm starting to get a bad feeling about Phil now. Why the damn dictatorship and tyrant mentality so early on in the relationship? I need to nip this in the butt as quickly as possible.

### KOPANO

I walk into the house and my senses kick in quickly. I take out my gun and point at an intruder in my house.

"Mongezi Khumalo, to what do I owe the pleasure." He's sitting comfortably on my couch, sipping on my expensive whiskey. If this is not disrespect then I don't know what is.

"The Shadow himself, I don't know if I should bow or take a selfie with the man, the legend" I chuckle

"Grasping at straws old man but a big shot like you, fishing doesn't look good on you" he laughs

"I have been searching for Shadow for more than 8 years, your little brother pisses you off and all of a sudden big shots like Miles are sniffing around him.

Please Kopano you don't fool me. You are
a legend own it because I want to work
with you. Together you and I can take
over the world." I burst out laughing

"What are we, pinky and the brain? Let's say hypothetically speaking I was the shadows what makes you think I would want to work with you when I have big international contacts at my disposal? hypothetically speaking of course"

"Mongezi, get out of my house and next time I find you in here again, I'll get you arrested" he gets up

"For a Man who got his sister in law the the best security detail from overseas it's funny how you don't even lock your House. Are you that arrogant not to need security?"

"Get out!" He leaves and I close the door behind him. I take my phone

"You were right, I found him in my house.
Thanks for the heads up" I press send and call razor.

"Boss!"

"Razor, a week from now you must carry out the plan. Make sure no one gets shot, as soon as you have the money I need you to wait for further instructions."

"He hasn't said anything about being keen to do the job" I chuckle

"Trust me he's desperate, he will call you anytime from now" I hang up

"Remind me never to cross you" Lisa says walking in.

"By now he has figured out that he is screwd now the last part of my plan is to take a way his freedom" she nods

"You Mr Shadow are very bad, he has been blowing my phone and sending death threats"

"Serves him right, he will know not to mess with me ever again"

## TSHEPO MOLETSANE

Tumi took me in, I couldn't go back to

Tito's wife. How can I be so stupid. I can't
even hire a private investigator because I
can't afford one. She places a plate of
food in front of me and it's pap and
spinach with no meat.

"Thank you for taking me in, nits just for a couple of days, just until I get a proper place to stay. I'm expecting some money soon" she smiles

"You can take as long as you need to,
Bontle would love to have her father
around." I nod. This is not the Tumi I
know, life hit her so hard that she ran to
those fire fire churches shame. As soon as
I pull this job I need to give her at least a

start up capital to revive her online clothing business because wow

I called razor and he confirmed that next week it's going down. Whoever stole my money and my company will pay. I want to convince razor that splitting the money 6 ways won't work at least 3 ways sounds more like it. There's no honour amongst thieves anyway

CHAPTER 23

\*MONGEZI KHUMALO\*

I know for sure that Kopano is the bloody Shadow. He didn't deny it, the way he refused my offer to join forces clearly tells me that he is who I think he is and if it's true I need to force him to partner with me. He's known all over the world, a man like that should be celebrated not hiding behind his gangster wanna be brother of his.

"Are you out of your mind?" Njabulo shouts walking into my office

"Depends, what did I do?"

"You went and confronted Kopano about what I told you. Are you honestly insane? He could come after us now. Never show your hand mongezi, how many times have I told you that?" I chuckle

"Don't forget that I'm fucken older than you and you will not scold me like a damn 5 year old. I wanted to look into his eyes and ask him straight up if he is the shadow." He shakes his head

"Well then he has filed a restraining order against you, I'm here to give you this. You need to sign it and appear in court on the date mentioned there" wtf?

"Kopano is crazy, why would he do that?

A restraining order, really?" I think he's
trying to divert attention away from the
whole Shadow thing but I'm on to him.
I'm like a dog with a bone, there's no way
in hell I'm letting go of this.

"Clearly he is annoyed by you, I don't think he is the Shadow. He probably

works for him or something and now you poking your nose in his business makes him unsettled. Shadow thrives on being the best kept secret" now that's another angle. Njabulo could be right, Kopano could be working for Shadow.

\*KOPANO\*

I knock twice before letting myself in, I am at Bree's place to make sure I cook a delicious meal for her. I know she's not back from work yet but Kgatli is home with his babysitter and the guards

"Uncle K!" He shouts as soon as he sees me.

"What's up champ, how was school?"

"It was okay, I came number one in a spelling bee" I pick him up and spin him around.

"Well done champ, you are smart" he beams with pride then runs off to God knows where.

"You can leave Sisi" I tell the babysitter who's literally a child herself but she's

busy drooling over me. As soon as she leaves, I get started on the pots. I'm moving swiftly in the kitchen making just a simple pasta dish with meatballs and parmesan cheese.

As soon as she walks in she gets the shock of her life seeing me in the kitchen wearing her apron.

"Good evening baby mama" I say planting a kiss on her forehead.

"Dinner is ready, go freshen up and come back, I've already bathed Kgatli and helped him with his homework." She's speechless but she nods and walks away.

"The food was delicious, thank you" she says getting up and clearing the table. I get up and follow her to the kitchen. I hug

her from behind placing my hands on her stomach. I love the effect I have on her because she's already breathing heavily.

"How's my baby treating you, any morning sickness?" She shakes her head. I swiftly turn her around and rub my thumb on her soft lips.

"Thank you for carrying my seed" she looks down but I lift her face with both my hands and capture her lips.

She welcomes the kiss and we just get lost in the moment, a moan escapes her lips. She moves her hands and puts them around my waist.

"Haaa, mama!" Kgatli exclaimes cutting short our electrifying moment. She quickly lets go of me looking shy all of a sudden.

"Look what you did to me" I whisper showing her my huge bulge. She gasps and I chuckle

"That's not my doing Mr Moletsane" she says walking out of the kitchen laughing.

I just tucked Kgatli in bed, now I'm going to tuck in the mother. I'm in her bedroom,

she just took a shower and she's ready to sleep.

"Come here" I say patting the bed, I take of my shoes ane we get inside the covers. She keeps on yawning, shame she must be tired. Her head is on my chest and I'm busy massaging her sculp. I know soon she'll be asleep

"Will you be here when I wake up?" I sigh

"I'll be here first thing in the morning, there's something I need to take care of with Thapelo but best believe that your breakfast and lunch will be delivered by yours truly"

"You don't like peace neh, Phil is not happy" I chuckle

"Don't ruin things by talking about him, you and I know that you are stringing him along, you love me I love you and we are having a baby so do the guy a favour and let him go" she remains quiet for a while

"You love me?" I chuckle

"Sleep Bree" I continue to massage her sculp until I hear light snoring and I know she's fast asleep. I get up and put my

shoes back on, careful not to wake her before leaving the room, I find jade in the kitchen making tea

"Boss"

"Sure jay, I'm leaving now please look after my people."

"Always boss"

\*BREE\*

I'm woken from my sleep by a heavy presence. I've always been a light sleeper which is how I was able to survive back in Mexico when other strung out prostitutes would want to steal my money. We were

given a daily target and if you didn't reach it all hell would break loose. You had to be a light sleeper or else

"I knew you were too good to be true" I sit up and find Phil sitting on my bed

"Phil" I try to switch on the side lamp

"Don't" my heart is beating fast, how did he get in, where the hell is Jade?"

"How did you get in?" He chuckles

"Don't let the law degree and my love for the pots fool you. I am a soldier. A highly trained deadly weapon but that's a story for another day for now get up we are taking a little trip. Try anything funny and I'll slit your son's throat while you are watching" I get up and he throws a jean and a hoody at me.

"Phil can we please talk about this"

"Shut the fuck up you hoe, you think I don't know that you are sleeping with him!!!"he says shouting and I shake in fear. The cool sweet guy I thought I knew is not here, this person is scary even his voice is deeper.

"Come let's go"he says as soon as I'm done dressing. We walk out the door and I'm met by jade laying in a pool of blood. I close my mouth trying to muffle a scream.

"My son" I plead

"I will fetch him in a month or two for now I was only able to get papers for you and I" I stop walking and look at him shaking my head

"Where are you taking me?" I ask with my voice trembling

"You think I'll keep you here while I watch you make a fool of me. My boys need a

mother, they know that you are coming so be good. I don't want to kill that bastard in your womb." This can't be happening, not again.

"Try anything Bree and I'll show you a side of me you never knew. Now come willingly or I'll drug you, seeing that you are in the first trimester we don't want to miscarry due to the drug now do we?" I shake my head and follow him with tears streaming down my face. I jump over

dead bodies of the guards as we get into the car and drive off. God my son is going to be traumatized when he wakes up. I can't believe this is happening to me again.

## CHAPTER 24

\*\*KOPANO\*\*

I went through the plan with Razor and everything seems in order. My little brother will be sleeping on the cold floor soon. After my meeting with Thapelo and Miles I was struggling to fall asleep, all I could think about is Bree and that kiss we shared, how her body is aware of my touch oh! And don't get me started on her moan. I still hear it in my ears. Fuck this I want her, I love her. Maybe Thapelo was right, what if she's just what I need to heal? I know it's only just after 3 am I left

her snoring last night but I know she will wake up around 6 and who knows I might even be lucky and get a quicky.

I drive to her house as soon as I step out of the car I'm met by a corpse of one of the security guys I hired for her. My heart starts pounding, I take out my gun and open the door. I am met my more bodies, I bend to check their pulse but it's not there they are definitely dead. I run to

Bree's room and find Jade in a pool of blood right next to the door. I open the door and my worst nightmare comes to life. Bree is not in bed, the pyjamas she was wearing are on the floor. I take out my phone calling Tshepo and Miles.

I go to Kgatli's bedroom and thank God he is sleeping peacefully.

\*\*\*\*AN HOUR LATER\*\*\*\*

"Do you have any idea who could have done this" Thapelo is even in tears, I know how much he loves Bree. This is messing him up

"Miles I need to contain this. Put an apb on all boarders and airports. No one goes in and out without being thoroughly checked. I want her picture displayed everywhere. Get the FBI and CIA involved.

It's time I called in a favour with Interpol."
Miles nods walking away.

I sit on the couch and let tears fall.

"I can't fail her like I did four years ago I just can't. She's pregnant for crying out loud, who would do this to her? I know it's not the Santos brothers because I killed them." Thapelo sits next to me.

"Four years ago you didn't have all the contacts you have now, you eventually found her and she came home because of you. Now I know it's harder because there's a child involved but I need you to be level headed. Bree needs you focused." I nod, Steve walks in after disposing the bodies.

"Boss is there anything else you need me to do" I nod

"I need you to tail the Khumalos. I know they can't be that stupid to do this but I want to know their every move" he nods, I get up grabbing my car keys.

"Where are you going?" Thapelo asks

"Please look after the champ. Don't take him to school and just come up with something to tell him about his mom. I'm going to soldier boy" I say already walking out.

\*\*\*\*PHIL KELEWELE\*\*\*\*

We are at the Lebombo border Crossing, there are police officers everywhere. The security is tighter than usual. I decide to head back to the car with Bree, we will wait for whatever it is their looking for to be found or the search to die down before attempting to cross the border again. A call comes through and I know it's my brother, he is waiting for us on the other side.

<sup>&</sup>quot;Kaka (brother)"

"Ka hapo (stay there) it's bad here, the border is swamped with the police. Did you kidnap the president's daughter or something? Her picture is everywhere" what?

"Kaka, you mean to tell me that all the police and military soldiers I saw at the border were for my mke (wife)?"

"Yes kaka, she is no ordinary person, whoever you took her from is highly influential. I suggest you lay low for a while" we say our goodbyes and I turn to Bree

"I need to go to work and pretend like everything is normal, I'll hide you in plain sight." She wipes her tears

"Why don't you set me free, I won't tell anyone I promise. We will forget that this whole thing happened please. I'm worried about my son, I am all he has. My brother is at UCT studying please"

"Don't worry muscle man will look after him until I make a plan to kidnap him." It's a 5 hour drive from Lebombo border Crossing to Jozi but I made it in less than 4 hours. I put Bree at one of my

restaurant's store room and locked. No one has the keys because I don't trust my staff. They steal a lot, I left her with a bucket to relieve herself and there's plenty of food to eat. I arrive at work it's just after 11am but i know no one will ask me shit about why am I only coming in now. I open my office door and I am met by muscle man sitting on my chair

"Osebetsa ha mmao neh(you work at your mother's place) you are only coming to work now?" I chuckle

"I think you are in the wrong office, shouldn't you be with your baby mama?"
He clenches his jaws and I smirk

"I'm going to peel off your face and let you go back to your home country with a skinless face so that all your brothers

there will know not to mess with the Shadow, in this lifetime or the next. You have 24 hours to bring Bree back alive and I just might make your death a quick and painless one. Test me and not even your Rebel leader brother Jefe can save you" he gets up and walks towards me looking at me dead in the eyes.

"24 hours Owudini" he walks out leaving me trembling, how did he know that name? Owudini means killer in Twi language. That is what they called me

when I was fighting for the government back then. Nobody knew about me because I was part of the special forces. Who is this man, how does he even know about my Rwandan brother Jefe? I swallow hard and sit on my chair.

<sup>\*\*</sup>TSHEPO\*\*

Today is the day that we pull off the heist of the decade since nkandla and the state capture. Razor is on board with us screwing over the four guys then we can share 45 mil each. That will be enough to put me back at the top then get my vengeance against my brothers. I'm honestly tired of staying with Tumi, she has changed and it's bloody annoying.

She refuses to have sex with me apparently she is celibate. I swear this church thing is messing up with her mind. She used to be sexy and attractive now she looks and sounds like those poor church mice. I drive to the warehouse to finalize everything for tonight.

****	AT THE	WARFHO	)USF****
		V V / \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \ \	<i>1</i> ( <i>1</i> ) 1

"Is everything sorted for tonight?" I ask
Razor as he walks in with three other guys
that we plan to screw over

"Everything is sorted, the man is leaving for Nigeria in the afternoon. And the guy on the inside says he will drug the other guards. We will wait for his signal then we will go in. It will be like taking candy from a kid." I nod, could it be that easy really? I hope nothing goes wrong because i need this money.

"How are we going to open the safe once we get there?" I'm trying to make sure that nothing gets left behind. I can't afford any glitches.

"Everything is sorted, the safe is opened with a finger print which the security already got using a glass the owner used."

I nod i guess we are really doing this.

While waiting for evening to come i keep myself occupied with business news until something catches my eye. An article about my company merging with a recycling company in Durban. The company apparently makes 1.2 million a

year, what an insult. I am a joke of the business world. I only have 5 percent shares left in the company which is next to nothing now thanks to Lisa and her people. The board members must be cussing me out right now. I just made their 25 percent shares useless right now. Then it dawns on me, my brother Thapelo does this to companies. Could it be that Lisa was sent by him?

I bang the table at the realisation that I've been played by my own brothers. They know how much this company means to me, how can they do this to me? When this damn heist is done, I am going to kill them both.

\*\*\*\*\*CENTURION\*\*\*\*\*

We park outside the huge house. We put in our ear plugs and take out our guns. Well I'm more of a knife guy hence they call me the butcher, I never miss when throwing a knife.

We get in the yard and the house with ease..the other security guards are out of it, they are sleeping on the job. I guess they were drugged as Razor said they would be. We proceed to where the safe

is and true to his word, the security guy
puts on a glove and places his hand on
the safe. The first attempt the Lazer light
goes red, shit!

"Let me adjust the glove maybe it's crooked." The gaurd says. I'm already sweating bullets. He tries again and it's open sesame.

"There's a lot of money in here we will have to put it in sports bags." The security guy says and we start putting the money in the bags. It took six to get the money in the bags in less than an hour. Once all the money was inside the bags we went out carrying the money to the getaway car.

We get into the car and drive off after agreeing to meet at the warehouse tomorrow to share the money.

"I can't believe everything went well and it was so easy, a walk in the park" one of the guys says pleased with himself. He doesn't know that as soon as we get to the warehouse, it's the end of him and his friends.

We drive into the warehouse and take out the bags. As soon as we enter we switch on the lights and what I see in front of me is enough to send me to my early grave.

"Mr Moletsane, I told you that it's only a matter of time before I catch you" that's detective Miles Peterson.

"Boys! read him his rights and cuff him" he goes to Razor and the other guys and whispers something to razor.

"Why aren't you arrested them too, they were with me?" He chuckles

"Anything you say will be held against you in the court of law so are you saying you were working together?" I bite my tongue and remain silent. I am doomed because I don't even have money to pay for an attorney. I watch as they load the money into the police car and my heart breaks into a million pieces.

\*CHAPTER 25\*

## \*\*\*\*\*BOITUMELO MASILO\*\*\*\*\*

I am at the all night prayer, the service is indeed moving. I feel the spirit of the lord around me, my nextdoor neighbour was kind enough to look after Bontle while I attend the all night prayer. God has been faithful, he has been providing for me and

my daughter through the other church women. They come to my house to pray with us and they leave food items. At first it bothered me that I have stooped so low by accepting handouts but then I realised that God is fixing my life and soon I too will be a blessing to others. Tshepo hasn't come home for two nights now and I see how he gets irritated when I pray or read the Bible. He tried a couple of times to sleep with me but I refused, I hope he gets his life together because as much as I wanted him to stay so that he can have a

relationship with his daughter I feel like he will drag me back to who I was.

"Boitumelo" someone shouts my name as I'm about to exit the church door. I turn and find pastor Tokelo

"Pastor" I say with a smile and he chuckles

"Why so formal? You were a bridesmaid at my wedding" true but I can't call him by his name

"I guess I'm used it now, I didn't see Nosi around is she okay?" He sighs

"She couldn't make it, Nosi is not into church activities but I'm praying for the lord to touch her heart" I sense a hit of sadness as he speaks

"Well God is faithful"

"He is, look at how beautiful you look, his glory is shining all over you." I laugh

"I am a new creation now" I say giggling and he laughs

"I will talk to my wife to invite you for dinner one of these days" I don't want to sound as if I'm a bitter ex friend so I just agree and omitt to tell him that me and his wife are no longer friends.

"Let me get going pastor, my daughter is waiting for me" I say already walking out and he smiles and waves.

When I get home. I open my phone after I had switched it off for the church service and I have a voicemail message. I press play and it's Tshepo's voice

\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*VOICE MESSAGE\*\*\*\*\*\*

"Tumi why is your phone off? Anyway I don't have time, I've been trying to get hold of Bree. I am arrested, I know you don't have money hence I need you to speak to Bree to at least get me a lawyer for my bail hearing then I'll take care of the rest"

I listened to the message a couple of times, what did Tshepo do to get himself arrested, dear God this man wants me to speak to my sister while I'm still praying for God to soften her heart.

I carry Bontle on my back and hurry to Modiri household. There's no security guards questioning me this time but there are cars parked in the yard. I knock on the door and after some time Thapelo opens the door then frowns

"Tumi what are you doing here?" I don't understand why he is not letting me in but it's okay.

"Hello Thapelo, I need to speak to Bree please" he looks at me from head to toe, clearly taken aback by my new plain Jane look.

"Bree is not here"

"In that case since you are Tshepo's brother, he wanted me to ask Bree to help him get a lawyer. He says is in police custody but he didn't mention for what" he laughs throwing his head back

"So he asked his current wife to beg his ex wife for help" I frown "Tshepo and I got divorced a long time ago. I am only here as a messanger. Have a good day and please greet Bree for me" I say already walking out. Seems to me like Tshepo is on his own. Thapelo didn't seem to care about his arrest at all, shame I'll pray for him.

\*\*\*\*\*TSHEPO MOLETSANE\*\*\*\*\*

I've been in the damn interrogation room for hours, the state lawyer they got for me is fucken useless, telling me to admit guilt and because I'm a first time offender I will get a reduced sentence.

"How long have you been a lawyer?"

"We are going off track Mr Moletsane but to answer your question. I graduated two years ago." I chuckle

"If you were good at your job you would know that even through I have never been convinced of any crime I have been linked with a lot of crimes but due to lack of evidence I've never been arrested.

Now you come here telling me to confess because you want this over and done

with, you give me wack advice." He keeps quiet because he knows that I'm right.

"I am here because you can't afford a lawyer, that is why I'm here. If you think you can do better then you have the right to refuse counsel and represent yourself.

"I sigh, just when I was about to talk.

Njabulo walks in

"Thank you counselor but your services will no longer be required. You can go"the nerdy lawyer leaves without saying a word, I look at Njabulo with questionable eyes

"Why didn't you call me man, I thought I was your lawyer" I sigh

"Did Bree call you? Thank goodness she did" he frowns

"Bree didn't call me, news about your arrest is everywhere. Why didn't you call?" I look down

"I'm down and out, my brothers have literally took everything away. The Lisa woman was a fraud. I have nothing to my name, I tried getting money by pulling a

heist but I got caught red handed. I can't even afford you man" I say with my voice breaking

"We go way back Tshepo, you should have called me. As much as I'm all about money, we are friends and I would never ditch you" for the first time since I've been arrested, I allow myself to be vulnerable and I let the tears fall.

"I asked the guys around here about your case and man it doesn't look good. The guys you were with cut a deal with Peterson in exchange for a suspended sentence. They are handing you to Peterson on a silver platter. I'll do everything in my power to get you bail but you need to beg your brothers man." I'd rather rot in here than beg Kopano. As for Thapelo it would be a cold day in hell before I beg that smug bastard.

I'm taken back to my cell but I find a guy I don't know, occupying my bed, I turn, about to ask the warden about this intruder but what he says shatters me to pieces

"Have fun Moletsane, curtesy of the Shadow himself" my brother would never do this to me, he knows what I went through. He can't do this to me.

"Don't just stand there sweetheart. I won't hurt you, I'm going to give you some good loving and if you behave, I'll let you cum." The rock lookalike my cell says with a smirk. I swear I'll never forgive them. I hate my brothers. This oversized man will rape me in hell, I'd rather die

\*\*\*\*\*\*BREE\*\*\*\*\*

I've been cooped up in this place the whole day. I don't even know what time it is. I've been eating canned meatballs and breakfast biscuits the whole day. I'm uncomfortable, I feel claustrophobic nje I just want to leave this place. I can't help but to think about the horror that my son

is going to wake up to. I just hope someone finds the dead bodies before my son wakes up. I wipe my tears rubbing my tummy, I hope I can survive this once again. I tried screaming and shouting but no one could hear me.

I hear the turning of a key and the door flies open. In walks Phil, the sight of him suddenly makes my skin crawl. "Who is muscle man, what does he do for a living?" He looks agitated

"I don't know" he chuckles

"You mean that you opened your legs to a man, let him nut inside you but you don't know if he's a gangster or a serial killer!!!!" Why is he shouting

"I don't know what Kopano does okay but whatever it is, he does it very well because he is rich" a slap lands on my face

"You bitch! I should have known that you South African women love money nothing else, how are you going to admire another man in front of me" Phil is crazy, I think something is wrong with him upstairs. How did I just admire Kopano? I'm holding my cheek looking at

him with a shocked expression. I swear I'm cursed. His phone rings and he answers it. I cannot make out what he is saying because he is speaking in another language but judging from his tone and body language. Whatever the person on the other line is saying is not good at all. He turns to looks at me with deadly eyes before throwing his phone against the wall shouting.

"MY CHILDREN HAVE BEEN KIDNAPPED,
YOUR BOYFRIEND GAVE ME 24 HOURS
TO BRING YOU BACK. ITS ONLY BEEN A
FEW HOURS AND HE ALREADY TOOK MY
CHILDREN!!!" he says shouting at the top
of his lungs. I move back shit scared, Phil
is a naturally dark skinned man but now
he looks navy blue. He's breathing heavily.

"Wear this" he hands me sunglasses and covers my head with a hoodie.

"Let's go, I'm parked at the back but if in case one of my workers spots us and you draw attention then I'm going to punch your guts out. You will vomit that bastard you are carrying. Understand?" I nod while wiping my tears, I have no idea where he is taking me.

\*CHAPTER 26\*

I'm driving back to mpumalanga at the Lebombo border Crossing, I have to get out of South Africa as soon as possible. I know it will take 5-6 hours for him to get here, which will buy me enough time to negotiate for him to release my children. I look over at my Bree, she's sleeping like all is well in the world, from the very first time I saw her I was taken. Little did I know that she will be this much trouble, I wanted a good woman who would be easy to control not like my feminist ex

wife. Bree gave off a calming, down to earth aura but I did not know that I'll be fighting another man for her.

We get to the Lebombo border and I stuff her into the car boot. I take her phone and switch it on, I send our current location before throwing the phone in the passenger seat.

I make my way to the border with my passport. And I cross swiftly to Mozambique. My brother is already waiting for me.

"Kaka"

"Habari yako (how are you)?"

"Not good Kaka, my kids have been taken, that man seems to be well connected, maybe special ops or something, He knows about my military name."

"Let's get you to our secret camp in Zambia then we can take it from there but rest assured Kaka we will bring your wife home" we have to take a 25 hour drive to Zambia because we need to stay under the radar in case muscle man

alerted the police and boarding a plane needs a lot of security checks.

After a long drive, a day and a couple of hours to be exact, we get to the secret rebel camp in the city of Lusaka. Upon arrival we are met by men wearing all black gear.

"Phil kelefetwa and Jefe Guin you are both under arrest. I would read you your rights but where you are going you won't be able to excise them. You will be taken to maximum security torturing facility" my heart beats fast. I look over at Jefe, he looks defeated. Did his fellow rebel group sell us out?

"My friend if in deed there's any crime that I committed here then only military

police should be the one arresting me" I say

"Like I said Mr kelewele all your rights don't count on this one hence I'm not reading them out to you" he says shoving me inside the SUV while my brother is shoved into another SUV. What did I get myself into.



"Boss miss Bree's phone just switched on" I get on my feet

"Track it" Steve is clicking furiously on his laptop

"No need boss, they just sent a location.

They are at mpumalanga border Crossing,

Thapelo and I don't need to be told twice.

"Steve, call Miles and tell him to put out Phil's picture. His going to make a run for it" I get into the car with Thapelo and he speeds off. Three and half hours later we reached the parking lot at the Lebombo border
Crossing, we literally flew here I look around while I'm still on the call with
Steve. Thapelo points at a blue Chevrolet
SUV I'm certain it's soldier boy's car.

We look around but we don't see anything, I break the car window and the keys are on the ignition and Bree's phone is in the passenger seat.

"Do you think he left with her?" I shrug

"Bree's picture is everywhere I don't think he crossed the border with her, let me check the trunk" we both run to the trunk and as soon as we open she screams startled.

"Bree it's us baby" she looks at me like she doesn't believe in really here. She launches herself in my arms letting out a gut wrenching sob which breaks my heart. A message comes through to my phone, I try to remove Bree from my arms so that I can check the message but she holds me tightly.

"Check the message for me" I hand the phone to Thapelo and he reads it out loud

"He's traveling to Lusaka, Zambia he will get there latest tomorro at a secret rebel camp. The Interpol will be waiting for him when he gets there" I nod and hold Bree until she calms down a bit

"Let's get you home Okay?" I whisper in her ear and she nods. We get inside the car

"Do you need anything before we hit the road?" She nods

"Mc feast deluxe, hot wings, ribs and an apple crusher please" I smirk and she breaks into a beautiful smile. Her eyes are puffy and red, she looks like she lost weight. When I get my hands on the soldier boy he will beg for mercy, I'm going to fucken peel off his face.

After getting everything she requested I sit with her at the back while she's stuffing her face. Thapelo keeps looking at us through the mirror with a naughty smile on his face.

"You guys look so cute together, Breezy
I'm happy we found you, my shoulder
hurts from having his big head laying on it
crying. You can imagine the trauma I went
through of seeing a big ass man crying

like a baby. I need two of your sessions to get back to normal again" Bree rolls her eyes laughing a lazy laugh.

"Do you believe him?" She looks at me for some time

"Thank you guys for saving me, I just didn't know that Phil is a psychopath. He

seemed normal." She says and her eyes become glossy again

"No more, no more talking about that scum. I would move mountains for you Bree, I love you." I say cupping her face, she looks at me shocked. I squeeze her hand looking into her eyes but she looks down.

"It's okay if you don't love me too but I want you to know that you are mine, from now on Bree you will have the best. You are my woman now, the boss lady" she giggles then rememberes something

"Oh my gosh! My son, Jade, the other guards. It's all my fault" she buries her face in her hands.

"Hey hey hey! Look at me" I say removing her hand from her face

"Kgatli is fine, he is with my good friend and colleague Steven. He didn't see anything, I came in the wee hours of the morning that day because I wanted to declare my undying love for you and claim you officially as my woman but when I got there I was met by my worst nightmare. The police came quickly and removed the bodies before Kgatli could

see anything, he thinks you are at a work conference. As for Jade and the other guys they signed up for this kind of job. It's sad but don't blame yourself if they didn't die, and you were kidnapped on their watch, I was going to kill them myself." Her eyes pop and I chuckle kissing her forehead

"Aren't you full yet" she gives me a death stare and I laugh.

"Do you need anything counselling? You have been through a lot." She shakes her head

"I just need my son and to speak to
Thabiso then I'll be okay." I don't know if
she's really strong or she's acting strong.
I'll sneak some counselling in somehow.

\*\*\*\*\*\*TSHEPO\*\*\*\*\*

I'm laying on his chest after what happened last night, I don't know how to feel or what to make of it. I thought we were going to fight but instead he was gentle. He started kissing me and touching me, I wanted to fight him off but

he kept telling me to relax that he's not going to penetrate me. I let him be, he took off my clothes and spread my legs. Part of me wanted to push him off but another part was enjoying it. He gave me one hell of a blowjob before kissing me on the forehead and told me to sleep. The whole night I've been chanting the words "I'm not gay, I'm not gay"

"Are you awake baby?" I jump off the bed with nothing but disgust on my face

"Who's your baby? Fucken leave my cell man" he chuckles

"That's not what you said last night" I scoff

"Look man I know my brothers paid you to hurt me but please man to man can we just forget about this whole thing and go out separate ways?"

"My name is Sgora and I run this block, yes I was sent to soften you up but damn baby you taste good, you smell good and you have beautiful features. I don't want to fuck you like a bitch. I want you to cum and experience some Sgora loving. You don't need to overthink this or label it" he comes close to me and cups my face, he gives me a kiss and bloody hell I I kiss him

back. The things he is doing to me but I have to stop this, I move away from him

"Stop this! I'm not gay!" I shout

"But he says otherwise" he says pointing at my boner. I look down embarrassed he comes close again lifting my chin

"Don't over think this, we are just two people exploring eachother's desires" he

captures my lips again and I kiss him back touching his broad chest.

"You want me to make you feel good?"
He asks between my lips and I nod. He gives me head, sucking and licking. I can feel my tip on his throat and it drives me crazy.

"You like that" I nod

"I can't hear you"

"Yes! Ah! Sgora" I shoot cum into his mouth and he swallows. He comes up kissing me on my mouth and I taste my cum.

"Let's rest it's still early and from today onwards, you are mine and no one will touch you. Okay baby,?" I don't reply I just

close my eyes and hope my shame will stop my heart from beating.

**CHAPTER 27** 

I wake from a nap, I look around and I don't recognise this room, it's a beautiful room bigger than my house. Okay maybe I'm exaggerating a bit but the room is huge with a king side bed. I don't remember how I got here, I must have dosed off in the car. I am grateful I made it out okay and that Kgatli didn't see something that will leave a scar forever.

The door swings open and Kopano walks in holding a tray.

"You must be hungry, you've been sleeping for hours." My stomach had to growl right at that moment. I nod with a smile, he places the tray to the bed and pecks my lips. Gosh I don't know how to respond to this. The butterflies, the goosebumps everywhere. I decide to ignore his gesture and dig into the glorious smelling plate of food.

"Kgatli is downstairs with MaSilvia" I frown

"Who's that?"

"Our helper"

"Our helper? Kopano where am I?" He smiles, it's weird seeing Kopano this relaxed even his facial features are relaxed

"This is our house, I didn't want you to stay where Sne and I used to live so I bought this house two weeks ago. You and Kgatli will live here, MaSylvia will do all the chores, I don't want you to overwork yourself. You are carrying precious cargo, oh and this is our

bedroom" he says getting up and leaving me dumbstruck.

After taking a looooong soothing bath I look around for something to wear, there's a walk in closet wow. My heart falls when I see women's clothing, tears prick through my eyes until I noticed my favourite red dress and my black satin blouse and my Jimmy Choo stelitos and my green halter top. What a minute! These are my clothes!!! I chuckle. I don't know whether to find this creepy or damn romantic. While I was eating canned meatballs he was busy moving my clothes.

This house is enormous and beautiful, wow I get to the bottom stair while busy admiring this place, the interior design is something out of the magazine. Kgatli comes running towards me almost tripping over but I was quick to catch him.

"Mommy! Why did you leave for work without saying goodbye" I crouch to his level

"Mommy was in such a hurry and because you were sleeping I didn't want to disturb you but mommy missed you so much I cut the trip short just to come kiss your cute face" I say kissing him all over the face causing him to giggle. I get emotional just the thought of leaving my

son again hurts me after missing out on four years of his life.

"Uncle K says this is our home now and I have a huge room, it's bigger than my old room and my bed is a car" he is so excited. I get up and walk to the living room. Kopano is on a call and it looks serious judging by the expression on his face. As soon as he hangs up he looks at me smiling. He signals me to come to him and I do.

"Are you okay?" I nod

"Baby can you go to your room, mommy wants to talk to uncle K." He runs off

"No running!" I turn to look at Kopano folding my arms.

"Who gave you permission to go through my stuff and move them. Who said I want to stay with you? You can't make such huge decisions without talking to Me first. Me being pregnant with your child doesn't mean that you can control me" I say sternly.

"I'm sorry, you are right I just thought you will be traumatized coming back there. I want you to stay with me, you and Kgatli

but if you are not there yet emotionally then it's fine I'll give you space" I sigh

"I just think it's too soon"

"I get it, please stay here. I bought this house for you, the tittle deed is in your name. I will go back to my apartment and when you are ready I'll move in with you." No that's not what I want, I didn't want to seem desperate but I want to stay with him so badly.

"Ma!" A woman who looks like she's in her late 50s walks in.

"Ma! This is the lady of the house, the boss lady, Kgatli's mom and the queen of my heart" my eyes glitter with tears, these bloody hormones.

"Why are you crying?" This idiot next to me asks

"I would also cry with an intro like that, it's very nice to see young couples in love. It's nice to meet you my child" I smile wiping my tears

"It's nice to meet you too ma" Thapelo walks in with a white man and a freakishly gorgeous woman. The way she's looking

at Kopano as she enters makes me feel uneasy or is it because she's gorgeous.

"You are still not packed boss?" The woman says.

"You don't see my woman" Kopano asks and she chuckles

"Hey "his woman" I'm Lisa and this is Steve, we work for Shadow" I frown

"Who's shadow?" Kopano shakes her head

"nevermind this one. I'm going away for a couple of days or a week tops. Steve and Thapelo will look after you until I get back. There's money in the safe you saw in the closet for whatever you want the code is your birthday." If I'm staying behind with

Steve and Thapelo which means he's leaving with the walking temptation.

"Can I speak with you privately please" he nods and we go upstairs

As soon as he closes the door I place my hands on my waist

"So you think I'm a fool Kopano?" He frowns

"You want to go with miss long legs alone to god knows where for a week?" He smirks

"Are you jealous" gosh he looks pleased with himself.

"I don't see Lisa that way man" I chuckle

"It's because you're blind that woman wants you" he comes closer to me capturing my lips

"And I want you" he says between the kiss.

"I want you too" I whisper. Right there and then he claims my body. Leaving wet

kisses, slowly and passionately. He lays me on the bed after taking both our clothes off. He kisses each part of my body like he's admiring every inch of me. He stops for a moment and looks deep into my eyes.

"I love you, don't take your eyes off me okay?" I nod and I just lay there as he nibbles on my cookie like this its his favourite food. I'm a moaning mess, gosh I hope this room is sound proof before I'm so loud. He cups up and without warning

enters me, I gasp as my cookie walls fully accommodates his shaft. I close my eyes as I feel overwhelming pleasure hit.

"Look at me baby" I open my eyes and look into the eyes of this beautiful man. He moves slowly and he occasionally kisses my forehead. His strokes are deep and meaningful, I swear missionary has never been this mind-blowing.

I'm laying naked on his chest, I'm now clingy. I don't want him to go anywhere with that woman.

"Please don't leave me" he kisses my forehead

"Its just for a few days baby" I nod. We take a shower together and I pack his clothes

"Thank you" I nod, we walk down stairs and Thapelo is playing video games with Kgatliso while Steve is busy on a laptop top. Miss flamingo legs gets up from the couch

"Finally!" I'm tempted to roll my eyes

"Kopano turns and kisses me on on the forehead then pecks my lips.

"I'll try to call you every chance I get" I nod. He crouches down and kisses my tummy.

"Call me everyday Moletsane" he nods pecking my lips one more time. I feel my tears on the verge of coming out.

"Don't worry his woman, I'll take good care of him" she says winking and I get an uneasy feeling again. I know I'm not

paranoid. I watch as they leave. My mood is below zero, I'm not happy at all.

"Why is he taking her and not you?" I ask Thapelo

"Because he only trusts me with his woman" I scoff

"Lisa is harmless, yeah they used fuck a long time ago but it ended. Lisa is like one of the boys now" Thapelo says bursting my bubble.

\*\*\*\*\*\*\*TOKELO\*\*\*\*\*\*\*

She walks in again smelling of another man's scent. I'm no fool, I know that my wife is cheating on me. I've been praying to go to give me wisdom on how to handle this situation because this is too much now. We are like two strangers living together, I don't understand why is she behaving like this as if she was forced into this marriage. I have spoken to the church leaders and with my family about getting a divorce. I want to free her so that she can be with the man she truly loves. My heart can't stand this anymore. "Nosipho can I please have a word with you" I ask as she's about to enter the shower

"Can we talk after I'm done taking a bath?"

"Come as you are, I'm used to the Gucci rush men perfume mixed with a hint of tobacco scent on you. This won't take long" her eyes pop she tries to say something but she's too shocked to speak

"I love you Nosi, from the first time we met at gold reef city, I made a promise to God that day that if you agreed to become my wife, i will accept my calling and serve him all the days of my life" she looks down playing with her fingers.

"True to my word, when you accepted my proposal I accepted my calling and I made two of the best choices in my life, I chose the lord and I chose you. With that being said, Nosi you are not happy. You come home smelling of another man. I hoped that you would be honest with me and tell me the truth, you know? Spare me that humiliation of hearing the church members saying they saw you at redison hotel while you said you are going to visit Bree.

"I don't want to fight or ask you how can you do that to me because I believe in God so much that i know the plans he has for me are to prosper me and give me a good future. I know all good things work together for the good of those who love the lord and I love the lord Nosi. He will give me a good woman who will lead the church side by side with me. I understand that you are not that woman and I'm not bitter about it. God knows why he wanted us to share time and space together. I set

you free to be with whoever you want. I want a peaceful and fair divorce. The church leaders know about this and they have accepted my request. I also told both our parents about getting a divorce. I want you to be happy and I wish you all the best" she chuckles

"So you ran to our parents and painted me as the bad guy without talking to me, is that being a good husband" I frown

"What is being a good husband to you? Keeping quiet when you come home without the decency of taking a shower wherever you come from? When you wash another man's semen in my shower? Is being a good husband keeping quiet when my when a medical bill shows that my wife was admitted at florah clinic for having an abortion? No Nosi I'd rather be a shitty husband in your eyes but God knows I've been a good husband to you. And FYI I told our parents that we fell out

of love with each other. Anything they know about you is what you have shown them when flouting the man in a blue Lamborghini around town. People see you Nosi, Nothing stays in the dark forever." I get up leaving her sobbing. I'm so hurt but I will not shed any more tears for this woman because God knows I have cried, I fasted for weeks praying that God touches her heart but I'm done with all that.

\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*

"So that's how you got arrested" I nod, we are sitting in my cell which has been upgraded with a couch and a flat screen TV. I'm sitting on the couch while he is laying on the bed. I'm narrating

everything that happened between my brothers and I.

"Can I be honest with you babes" I don't know how many times I've address the babe issue but he's having none of it.

"Yeah"

"You are spoiled, ungrateful, egotistical, hardheaded, foolish and inconsiderate."

"Wow, is that all?" I say getting up

"Sit your ass down and listen to me before I fuck that attitude out of you" I frown but sit nonetheless

"According to what you have told me, your brothers have always been good to you, having your back since after you killed you father. I know the little street cred you got from killing people, they named you the butcher. Other gangs wanted you dead and you didn't even notice because your brothers always cleaned up behind you. If they hated you they you would have died a long time ago or been arrested for the crimes you committed. You were a loose cannon, always showing off but your brothers

shielded you. I'm a hit man by profession and I don't know how many times the was a contract out for you life but your bother would pay me double to leave you alone. That's how I met Kopano" no that can't be true, my brothers hate me and what to see me suffer

"If my bothers loves me then why am I here? Why did they take my company and turned my woman against me?" He chuckles

"You tried to kill them, you proudly fucked your brother's wife. You are responsible for your father in law's death. Your brothers don't hate you. They are just pissed off and they are teaching you a lesson and I were you then I would have gotten on my knees and begged my brothers for forgiveness" I not ready to ask forgiveness but I know deep I know that he is right. I messed up



Lisa and I booked at southern sun
Ridgeway in Lusaka. We are here for Phil
Kelewele. He is held at a government
facility, I can't wait to torture him. I don't
want him dead but I want him broken, I
promised to peel off his face and he
thought I was being dramatic but he

doesn't know the lengths I would go for Bree, I would even die for that woman.

"Your phone is ringing, must I answer it?" I shake my head and she brings it to me, It's my Bree I get up going into my bedroom.

"Baby"

"Don't baby me Kopano, why didn't you tell me that you are going on a business trip with your ex" ex?

"Baby this pregnancy must be getting into your brain, my ex is dead remember?" she breathes heavily I can just imagine her cute face right now

"I'm not talking about that cheating ex wife of yours maan I'm talking about Miss daddy long legs" I chuckle, she's not flamingo legs now.

"Lisa is not my ex"

"Yeah but you two used to fuck or you still fuck, did you fuck her last night" I'm going to kill Thapelo

"Baby that was a long time ago, Lisa is like one of the guys, she has slept with Thapelo and even Steve, there's nothing there. Why would I fuck her last night when all I could think about was the love making we made." She giggles

"I meant it when I said I love you and I know how lucky I am to have a beautiful woman like you by my side"

"I miss you Kopano, your child is driving me crazy." Yeah I can believe it

"I'll be back soon in the meantime you can pack my clothes in luggages so that I

won't have a lot of work of packing when I come back" she remains silent for a while

"Where are you going?"

"To my apartment, we spoke about me moving until you are ready for us to live together"

"I don't remember having that conversation with you Moletsane, you are not going anywhere." I chuckle

"But you said th....." She cuts me off

"You are not going anywhere end of story.

Now I'm going to spend your money at
the mall, take care of yourself and stay

away from from miss universe please" I laugh throwing my head back

"I love you MaModiri" she hangs up and I sigh. I'm a man in love.

After talking to Bree, I took a shower and head out of my room only to find Lisa sitting on the couch naked crossed legs.

"And then?" She gets up and walks up to me.

"I thought you'd want to blow off some steam before heading to the job" I chuckle

"Lisa put some clothes on please, we need to get going" she tries to touch me but I yank her hand off

"You fucken forget that I'm your boss. Try that shit again I'll bury you Lisa" she starts crying

"Can't you see I'm in love with you? I'd do anything for you Shadow. I waited for you to mourn your Sne, I've always been there waiting" I chuckle

"That's why you slept with both my brothers and Steve? Don't bore me please"

"I did that to make you jealous, can't you see that we are good together?" I raise my eyebrows

"You are giving off Psycho vibes right now, must I be concerned about this outburst

Lisa? Should I worry about my wife's safety?" She scoffs

"Wow! She's been upgraded from your woman to your wife, her pussy must be on fire"

"Don't piss me off and you are damn right it's on fire. I asked you a question, should I worry?" She shakes her head

"I'm a professional Shadow"

"Good now act like one and get dressed.
You'll find me in the car." I walk out.

I really feel bad about how things are between Tokelo and I. He is a good God fearing man and I tried oh! I tried to love him but the love I have for Stan cuts too deep. He is the love of my life and I can't live without him. The five years we spent apart were horrible until two years ago when we reconnected and we have been

inseparable since then. The hiding, the secret rendezvous were just addictive. Nothing tastes sweeter than the forbidden fruit. Now I'm busy packing my bags, I honestly am going to miss this place. I had a comfortable life, as I said Tokelo was a wonderful husband and a good man overall. The woman who's going to have his heart, Will have everything.

"I guess this is good bye" he nods, I'm all packed, I place the ring on the kitchen counter and the car keys.

"Take the car Nosi, I bought it for you out of love. It's a gift." I nod and tears are threatening to come out. I remember the night he surprised me with an Audi Q5, i couldn't even pretend to be happy because it was the same night I had an abortion. I was in so much pain, I never told Stanley or him because I didn't know

who was the father. I still have nightmares about the decision I made that day.

"Thank you for everything Tokelo and I pray that you find a good wife" he smiles faintly

"Amen" he says then helps me drag my suitcases.

## \*\*\*\*AT STANLEY'S HOUSE\*\*\*\*

"Welcome home my love" he says kissing me and taking my bags into the house. He lives in a beautiful penthouse in lonehill estate, very fancy and very up market.

Compared to the humble house I had in omonde.

"Baby this is your home too. I'm glad you finally put us first and left your marriage. I was honestly tired of all the sneaking around." He brings me to a hug and I just feel overwhelmed with emotions. I'm just a bit sad for some reason. I have dreamt of this day for a long time and now that my dream has come true I'm feeling a sense of loss.

"Babe please change, we are going to see a friend of mine, I need to discuss some business with him" I frown

"I'm tired Stan, I thought we could spend time together" he pecks my lips

"Cute, unfortunately it needs to get done and since you are all mine now, I get to brag about my beautiful woman. You'll find me in the car" sigh!

We arrive at his friend's house, some white guy opens the door for us.

"Chef" the guy says to Stan. I frown because he's no chef, he can't even boil an egg. Kgatli comes running towards me and I frown

"Aunty Nosi!" He hugs me. Then Thapelo appears too. I didn't know that they know each other.

"My cook" Thapelo says greeting Stan, he doesn't look as surprised to see me as I am to see him. He hugs me too and tells me that Bree is in the living room. Stan kisses me on the forehead before going to the study to talk business. I wonder what kind of business because as far as I know

Stan owns chisanyamas and car washes while Thapelo is a business strategist.

Maybe he is looking to expand his businesses.

"I don't know I'm feeling a bit sad about how the whole thing ended you know" I'm sitting in the lounge with Bree, she told me all about her being kidnapped and rescued. I've been a bad friend because I haven't been checking up on her, she looks happy and in love with

Kopano. They both deserve all the happiness. I also just narrated everything that happened in my marriage.

"It's understandable why you are feeling that way chomi, it would have been easier if Tokelo was a jerk but the fact that he was good to you makes you feel bad but chomi this is your chance to finally be with the love of your life. Try to be happy because Stan will pick up on the bad

energy and think that you are regretting leaving your husband." I chuckle

"Well technically he left me but I lied to Stan and said I'm the one who asked for a divorce."

"Well it doesn't matter who left who. It's done now be happy and enjoy every moment" she's right. I am happy

"I'm happy"

\*\*\*\*\*IN THE STUDY\*\*\*\*\*

"So Nosi finally left heaven for hell" Thapelo says chuckling "Yeah man and I'm over the moon. With the big shipment I'm sending to Singapore man I'll be filthy rich and I want to marry her before she slips through my fingers again."

"Does she know about Sithelo, Musa and the kids?" Stan shakes his head

"I'll sit her down and explain to her besides we are Africans, she shouldn't be

bothered that much. I'll treat her like mamkhulu even though she'll be number 3"

"I think you should have been honest with her before she upped and left her marriage" Steve says "I didn't think she'd finally leave. I thought it was just an affair, she has no choice but to join the other two"

"And will Sithelo agree this time around? You know she gave you a hard time with Musa"

"Sithelo is hot headed but she knows what she stands to lose. I'm taking care of all her family members. She needs me, I

love the kids that she gave me but I don't need her"

"Enough about your your soon to be world war three at the Mthimkhulus let's get down to business. How much have you cooked so far? Will you make the deadline?"



\*\*\*\*\*\*PHIL KELEWELE\*\*\*\*\*

I don't feel anything at all but I do feel my skin fall off. Each part he removes, he

shows it to me. Each step he explained. From injecting me anesthetics then morphine and antibiotics to stop infections.

"Wow I didn't know a human being looks this horrible without skin tissue. He looks like, damn! Shadow I can't even...." She starts gagging and running out.

"Please stop I'm sorry" he doesn't say a word, he's in the zone. Concentrating on what he is doing.

"These are the ears that don't listen Phil, you should have left her the moment you found out that she was carrying another man's child"

"I'm s....so... sorry" his busy on my lips which makes it difficult to speak.

"Tell me Phil, what should I do to Jefe. He sold you out, but my spirit won't be at ease if I let him live, I mean he might come after me. Not that he will succeed but I'm about to be a father, I need peace In my life" so my own half brother sold me out. After everything I did for him. I regret the day I looked at Bree's way

"Khi...dkfn...kfh" I try to say kill him but with no lips it's impossible

"Shhh I'm stupid, I should have asked you that question before cutting your lips off, my bad but ska wara kao tshwara hore o batla horeng (don't worry I get you)" he gets to my chin and wipes sweat off with his elbow.

"I think we can call it a day and pick it up again tomorrow, I'm tired. I'll get someone to cover that up but here's a mirror, look at this masterpiece" he hands me a mirror and he literally peeled off my face. The pain in my heart, he might as well kill me. It's over for me, I'm a monster now.

\*CHAPTER 29\*

\*\*\*\*\*BOITUMELO MASILO\*\*\*\*\*

I check her temperature again. Dear God she's heating up, I gave her the Panado syrup I got from the clinic but her temperature is not going down at all. I have a cool damp cloth on her forehead to cool her down then all of the sudden, she starts getting seizures. I ran out of the house not knowing where I'm going. I almost got bumped by a car, the owner of the car opened the door.

"Tumi are you okay, I almost bumped you" it's pastor Tokelo.

"I'm sorry pastor my daughter Bontle is sick I need to take her to the hospital" I say tearing up. He opens the passenger seat for me and I get in. Bontle's seizure has stopped but her temperature is still alarmingly high, I am in tears scared out of my mind.

"Try to be strong Tumi, she will be alright"
I nod wiping my tears. We get to lenmed
private hospital and I rush out with
Bontle. As soon as I get to the reception
area, the doctors rush to her

"Mam is it cash or medical aid?" I stutter confused until pastor Tokelo spoke behind me.

"It's cash, please charge it to this card" he says handing them a card. They take my baby away, and we sit in the waiting room.

"Would you like me to call anyone for you?" I shake my head

"I have no one, no family. She's all I have." I say sobbing.

"She'll be okay. Let's pray" we hold hands and pray

"Jehovah rapha the lord that heals. We come to you with the understanding and faith in your word that with your stripes we were healed. We speak in past tense meaning that it has been already done for us. We just claim bontle's healing, we glorify your name and we thank you in advance for healing her in Jesus name

Amen." After the pastor's prayer I feel hopeful and light.

"Hello I'm doctor Naidoo are you Bontle's parents?" I nod wiping my tears. She sighs

"I'm sorry but Bontle's heart stopped, we tried our level best to resuscitate her after she flat lined but it was too late" I break down

"I don't understand what caused her heart to stop, she just had a cold and I took her to the clinic, they said just said it's bronchitis that's all." I say shaking my head and the doctor sighs

"She developed a condition called coronary artery disease usually develops after having some type of infection.

Acquired conditions that affect the

coronary arteries include: Kawasaki disease- This condition inflames and weakens the coronary arteries. Your daughter must have had Kawasaki which explains the high fever." I don't understand anything she's saying

"We prayed, pastor we prayed. Doesn't the bible say those who trust in the lord will never be put to shame? Doesn't the bible say the name of Jesus is above everything every disease? Was Corona

and kwa what what stronger than the power of God!!!" I say screaming.

"I prayed I trusted the lord kanti he was waiting to punish me for what I did to my sister. I'm being punished, my only reason for waking up in the morning, God take me now please!!!"

"It's okay" pastor holds me as I scream. I cry till I can't cry no more. The doctor

takes me to see my daughter. She looks like she can smile and show her four front teeth, this feels like a nightmare. I turn to the door and walk out, I see people moving in slow motion as I exit the hospital. I don't know where I'm going but all I know is that I want to get out of here

<sup>&</sup>quot;Tumi" I turn

"You need to sign for her body to be released maybe call a family member." It's the pastor. We are standing outside the hospital now

"She was my only family, her father is in prison, I don't have money to bury her. I just want to die with her, there's nothing left for me I'm an orphan with a bad past. I have no friends to call. Your wife hates

me, let me die in peace" he walks up to me and hugs me and I cry all over again

"Let me be there for you, I'll take care of everything. Just hold on to me even when you feel like floating around just hold on to me" I nod.

"Get in the car I'll sort everything out" I nod as he hands me the keys.

\*\*\*\*\*\*\*TOKELO\*\*\*\*\*

It's hard to sometimes understand the will of God but even in excruciating pain he is still God. This reminds me of the story of David. He fasted for weeks for his son to be healed but his son died, he never cursed God instead he dressed up

and broke his fast and continued with God. I know Tumi is a new Christian and as a new Christian it's easy for your faith to get tested but I hope she doesn't lose her faith because she's going to need God now more than ever. After I signed for the body to be released, I got an undertaker to fetch the body and also let the women in the congregation know so that they can be her strength. I asked Mme Lihle who is the women's leader at church to stay with her for the time being, She needs people in her corner.

\*\*\*\*\*FEW DAYS LATER\*\*\*\*\*

The congregation came in large numbers to bury little Bontle. Her mother is still broken but better than yesterday and the day before. Mme Lihle has been staying with her, ministering to her and

comforting her. I thank God for the strong women of faith in my church, God has truly blessed me with prayer warriors and true believers.

"Tumi how are you feeling?" We are coming from the cemetery. We are now at her house, you wouldn't tell that it was a funeral for an infant the way it was so huge. People from church came in great numbers, it was a lovely but sad service.

"I'm very grateful for your help pastor.

Mme Lihle has been like a mother to me."

I sigh

"I don't mean to pry but I didn't see any of your family members not even from Bontle's side. I know you said her father is in jail but doesn't he have relatives?" She looks down

"Everyone has written me off, they never cared about me and Bontle. I don't even have their contact details. I tried going to my sister Bree's house but the neighbours say that she moved out. Pastor I have no one but God now"

"And me" Mme Lihle says sitting next to her and she smiles hugging her

"This is just so sad. I sent Nosi a message about Tumi's daughter dying but she never replied. I guess she's right when she says she doesn't have friends because Nosi didn't bother showing up.

"All is well" she smiles faintly. This in deed sad

\*\*\*\*\*\*TSHEPO\*\*\*\*\*\*\*

"Bail is set at R750 000 and you will report to Mondeo police station twice a week. Court adjourned"

I give Njabulo a faint smile. I know I can't expect him to represent me for free and bail me out, I might as well await trial in prison because I don't have that amount.

"Maybe you should call your brothers and apologize I'm sure they will give you the money" I nod but I won't do that because they will think its not genuine, that I just need bail money.

I walk into the cell I now share with Sgora. He is watching soccer on the small flat screen. The warden opens for me and I get in throwing myself on the couch. Sgora was telling the truth when he said he runs this block. Everyone respects me here, I don't know as sgora's bitch or what but they have never uttered nasty comments.

"You're back, did you make bail?" I nod "But you don't look happy" "750k" "Ouch" I sigh

"What are you going to do?"

"Nothing I'll wait until my trial" he nods

"If you were to get out, what would you do on the outside" I sigh

"Go see my kids, I miss them especially my little girl. She looks so much like me, then I would apologize to both my ex wives for being shitty to them then lastly

try to fix things with my brothers" he smiles almost looking handsome, fuck!
What am I saying I mean almost looking decent.

"I'll bail you out" I chuckle

"Don't play like that"

"I mean it baby" I look at him and he doesn't look like he's kidding.

"Really?" He nods

I snuggle close to him and peck his cheek

"I don't know how to thank you" he smirks

"I can think of one way" I look down. He has never tried to penetrate me. All he

has ever done is to give me pleasure. I have never even returned the favour, but not ones has he complained.

"Look it's fine I understand that you are not ready okay, forget I said something" I smile

"Can I tell you a secret that I never ever told anyone not even my brothers or ex wife knows this" he nods

"The reason I was my father's favourite when he molested us was because I would sometimes cum when he penetrated me. Even when he touched me I would get aroused. I liked the things he did to me but I hated that it was my father doing all those things to me. I hated that it made me gay so I buried myself in a lot of pussy and did wild dangerous macho things to prove to myself that was not gay" he pecks my lips "I told you that you don't need to label this. We are just two adults pleasuring each other" I laugh

"Yeah but only one is getting pleasured" he smiles

"I'm a patient man" for the very first time ever since this thing between us started. I don't know what to call but for the first I initiate a kiss.

"I'm ready, let's go all the way" he looks at me for some time

"Are you sure?" I take off my clothes

"Does that answer your question?" He gets up and smashes his lips against mine



\*Six Months Later\*

\*\*\*\*\*BOITUMELO MASILO\*\*\*\*

It's been six months since I lost my Bontle, the worst six months of my life.

Losing her felt like I lost part of myself but thanks to the almighty who has been healing me on a daily basis. In his word he says that he is close to the broken hearted and each day I feel his presence and his overwhelming love. The church women never fail to come visit me and bring me prayer. Mme Lihle has been staying with me for the past six months. All her kids are grown and married so she lives alone. Each time she prepares to leave I come up with one excuse after another. She is the only family I have so I

don't want her to leave me. Tshepo did come out of prison and he was shattered about the passing of his daughter, he cried for hours which propelled my own tears. I thought he was going to throw tentrums and blame me but instead he apologized for everything he did to me and wished me all the best in life. He seemed different, calmer and happier, Pastor Tokelo has been very supportive as well, I was sad to learn about his divorce with Nosi but I pray to God that he finds a good woman. He deserves it, he is the

real deal you know. I got a job at Mr price thanks to one of the ladies at church, I'm very grateful because I can provide for myself now.

I'm busy folding clothes in my department and someone taps me on the shoulder I look up and it's a very pregnant Bree looking beautiful with her baby bump.

"Hi" I look down after greeting, I was not prepared to see her, not now

"Hello Tumi" I smile nervously

"Uhm you look beautiful" she smiles

"You mean I look like a whale" I laugh

"Never, such a beautiful whale" she smiles and we remain silent

"Bree I'm sorry" she nods

"Let's not talk about that, I just wanted to greet you. Please kiss my niece for me.

You know what give me your numbers and I'll arrange a play date for her and

Kgatli, they are brother and sister after all.

They need to have a relationship" I just break down and cry.

"Hey come on Tumi, no need to cry. We will start slowly okay? I still haven't forgiven you but I'm willing to try" she says touching my hand

"Bontle passed away six months ago" her mouth hangs open, tears form and she attacks me with a bone crushing hug and the baby she's carrying kicks and we both laugh through our tears

"May I?" She nods placing my hand on her tummy and the baby kicks again. I can't help but remember the moments I had with Bontle when I was pregnant.

"I'm sorry for your loss, I feel horrible that I wasn't there for you but as I said, it will take some time but I'm willing to try" I nod smiling

"And I promise you that I have changed and I will do everything in my power to earn your trust and your forgiveness." She smiles and hugs me one more time then someone clears his throat behind us

"Ladies" it's pastor Tokelo carrying flowers

"Maruti, it's been a while. How are you"

Bree says I turn to continue with my work

"Tumi these are for you". He says handing me the flowers, Bree is looking at me with a raised brow. Can the world swallow me now.

"Let me get going, Tumi I'll see you around, moruti! It was nice seeing you

again" I watch as Bree leaves and I turn to pastor Tokelo

"What is this? He looks at me confused

"I thought I should bring you flowers to cheer you up" I chuckle bitterly

"Well the little stunt you pulled cost me my sister's trust. She probably thinks I'm the reason that you and Nosi are divorced" I say burying my face in my hands.

"So what if that's what she thinks, you and I know the truth. I just wanted to put a smile on your face"

"Pastor Tokelo you are crossing the line. You messed everything up, she now

thinks I'm still the same person I was who was jealous of her friends. How can you do this? Did I perhaps give you any sign that I want to be with you? Does me needing you after losing my daughter make me an easy target? Please leave" I say wiping my tears. He looks at me hurt

"Pastor leave before someone from church sees you please" he nods walking away and I run to the toilets to cry my eyes out. I can't believe I was this close to

getting my sister back and Tokelo had to ruin everything. She didn't even bother taking my numbers.

It's my day off today which is a good thing because I hardly slept with how I spoke to pastor Tokelo and how Bree left after seeing the flowers he brought me. He has never done such a thing and to choose that very moment, God why?

"You have been awfully quiet Tumi what's the matter?" I narrate everything that happened at the store and she smiles

"Mme Lihle you are finding joy in my misery?" She laughs

"No child I'm just happy that pastor

Tokelo finally got the courage to approach

you" I shake my head

"You did get the part where I said that I went off on him right?"

"Good, he must know that you are not easy, but jokes aside Tumi. You too deserve to be happy. Pastor Tokelo is a good man and he loves you. I've seen how he looks at you. Now the world will have to adjust including your sister and your friend." I nod, I need to apologize to pastor Tokelo. I continue with doing the laundry, while busy hanging the clothes outside Mme Lihle calls me to come inside the house because I have a visitor. I just know it's the pastor because he is the only one who comes to visit

"Hey" she says hugging me. It's Bree

"Hi" I greet back.

"Sorry I left in such a hurry yesterday I ended up forgetting to take your number. I just wanted to give you and moruti some space." I look down and sigh

"I swear there's nothing going on with pastor and I, it was the first time he brought me flowers but I explained to him that I can't go there because he was married to my friend. I swear on my daughter's life that I have changed." She takes both my hands

"Moruti is a good man who also deserves to be loved. Tumi when love finds you, you grab on to it. Who am I to judge you,

infact I am happy for you. I'm pregnant for my ex husband's brother and I love him so much. Many judge me especially his mother but I don't care." I wipe my tears

"I kind of pushed Tokelo away and told him to stay away from me." Her eyes pop

"You need to fix things Tumi don't let that good man slip away. Nosi is in love and is

about to get married. You too deserve happiness." She says hugging me then she gives me her business card.

"Let me get going. See you soon" she says heading for the door leaving. Now I need to hurry and apologize to pastor Tokelo.

\*

The past six months has been amazing, each day I fall deeper in love with Mr Mthimkhulu. He is just the best, today we are going to KZN so that he can introduce me to his family.

"Baby I need you to keep an open mind when we get there okay?" I frown

"What do mean?" He sighs

"I love you so much I don't want to lose you my love" i kiss his cheek

We get to his homestead and already his family is waiting outside the yard to welcome me.

"Hello I'm Sithelo umamkhu" I nod hugging her

"I'm Musa Zolani's second wife" I freeze dead on my tracks. Zolani is Stan's first name. I look at him

"Let's get into the house. I'll explain everything" I nod and we get into the house and I'm led to the sitting room.

"This is Sithelo my first wife and together we have three children. It was an arranged marriage, that's why back then I told you that I was not in a good space to marry you. She is the reason why.

Although it was arranged, I have grown to

love her and respect her very much. She finally agreed to let us marry which is why we are here and there's Musa my second wife, together we have two children" I laugh, like really laugh clapping my hands

"Are you serious, I left my marriage for this? Tell me this is some kind of joke. You drove with me all the way here to break my heart In front of your family?" I get up on my feet

"Take me home, I want no part of this freak show." He chuckles,

"Sit your ass down Nosipho and stop acting like a brat. Sithelo, Musa please excuse us" they get up leaving me with him then an older woman who I assume is his mother walks in with a man wearing sangoma outfit and he started chatting.

"You need to get cleansed for the Mthimkhulu life that you cut short. You must name him and then get cleansed" God why? I cry looking over at Stan who looks emotionless

"I didn't know it was your child, I couldn't keep the pregnancy because I was unsure of the paternity." He scoffs

"I love you Nosi, if I didn't love you so much I would put a bullet between your eyes now this is what's going to happen:

We are going to do the cleansing ceremony then I'm paying lobola for you. I'm going to build a house for you right next to your sister wives and you are moving here kwa Mthimkhulu. You don't deserve to be my jozi wife" I shake my head

"I'm not marrying you, we can do the ceremony then I'll go back home. They didn't chase me away kithi mina, I will not be tied down to a polygamous marriage. I know I was wrong to abort my child. It was wrong of me I admit but you deliberately kept the truth about your Circus show you got going on here and bhuti I want no part of it" I feel a sting on my cheek

"Zolani in front of me, you beat women now?" His mother says and I get up.

"I'm done with you" I try to walk out but he grabs me and drags me outside the house.

"Zolani maan don't beat her up" his mother's words fall to deaf ears does he not beat me up. He beats me up until I don't scream anymore. I lay on the ground curled up like a ball bleeding all over.

"If you think you will leave me then you don't know me Sisi, I said I love you meaning the only way out is through a casket. Now go clean yourself up we performing the cleansing ceremony tonight and tomorrow I'm sending a letter to your family" he clicks his tongue then walks away.

\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*

Me and Bree are finally together and happy. I never thought I'll be this happy after Sne but her death was a blessing in disguise because I got to be with the most beautiful woman in the entire universe and she's all mine. I am planning on popping the question real soon and make

her mine completely. My mother is not crazy about the Idea of me being with Bree she even went as far as saying that I should just do a court wedding because the Moletsane already paid mahadi for her. I just laughed it off but when the time comes I'm going to do the whole mahadi thing and a traditional wedding for her. She deserves it after all, Phil Kelewele? Well let's just say he is alive at a hospice care in Ghana, he is paralyzed for the neck down and he will be wearing a mask for the rest of his pathetic life. I didn't

want to kill him but I wanted him to be hopeless and helpless.

Bree went out to her friend or sister Tumi, I was so shocked to learn that that Tumi is ntate Modiri's daughter wow. My brother and I are trying to fix things, I don't know what Sgora did but Tshepo is a different man. I heard he lives at sgora's apartment and drives his cars. I asked Sgora what was happening between them, he laughed and said it's none of my

business so I let it be. For the sake of peace Tshepo is not allowed in this house because he did have a hand in ntate Modiri's death so I understand that Bree is not ready to forgive him as yet but as for Thapelo and I we are working on forgiving him. He seems genuine but yet again he might be plotting against us. I'm at home with Kgatliso playing video games when a knock disturbs us. I go to open and get the shock of my life

"Pablo what the hell?" I drag him to my study telling Kgatli to continue alone. He has four bodyguards behind him

"Why didn't you tell me you were coming?" He sighs sitting down

"I'm here to warn you, the Santos had a big brother we didn't know of who was in Spain. He is back with a vengeance and

wants to know who's behind the deaths of his brothers. Miguel Santos is his name. I fled after he killed half of my men, I have an alliance with the Germans but I couldn't go underground without warning you. If anything happens to me I'm leaving everything to senorita Bree. My lawyer will be in contact, please watch over Bree and the Bambino" I chuckle

<sup>&</sup>quot;You are keeping tabs on me old man" he laughs

"But of course" we remain silent

"They say Miguel is worse than his brothers, god speed my friend" he gets up and he hugs me

"Kopano you and Pablo? Are you behind my kidnapping?" I rush to her because it

looks like she's having a panic attack and I get to her in time because she collapsed in my arms

\*CHAPTER 31\*

\*\*\*\*\*\*\*TOKELO\*\*\*\*\*

I understand that I caught Tumi off guard but I didn't think she would react the way she did. I know how much having a relationship with her sister means to her but I was kind of hurt when she made it sound like I'm taking advantage of her grief. I asked one of my junior pastors to minister today because I am so down. I'm sitting in my office, it's around 7 am, and the church service begins at 9 am but the praise and worship team is here practicing including the intercessors. A knock comes through and I tell the person to come in.

"I'm sorry to disturb you but can I have a moment of your time" it's Tumi looking

beautiful as always with her short hair and perfectly glowing brown skin.

"Miss Masilo, what can I do for you" petty
I know but I wouldn't want to be accused
of taking advantage of her again. She
sighs taking a sit

"I never told you why my sister and my friends and I went our separate ways" I nod listening

"I have always been jealous of my sister and my friends. I always wanted to look better than them but they got the guys Nosi had the most sought after gangster back then, Bree had Tshepo a gang member and good looking, one of the rich Moletsane brothers then there was Shelly who was on and off with Thapelo

but as for me nobody wanted me. My jealousy became worse when Bree got married so with the help of my parents I organized Bree's disappearance and sold her to the Russians while I played happy family with her husband and son" my eyes pop

"Were you the reason we held all night prayers asking for her Safe return? Nosi couldn't eat nor sleep. "Yes" she says looking down

"I'm not proud of what I did but that's why I acted like I did yesterday" now I get it .

"I'm sorry for how I spoke to you. You caught me at a bad time and thank you

for taking your precious time to get me flowers" she says looking down

"I'll forgive you under one condition"
She nods

"Go on a date with me, tomorrow night 6 pm and I'll pick you up" her eyes become glossy

"You still want to go out with me after what I told you?" I nod getting up and I plant a kiss on her forehead.

"God has forgiven you now forgive yourself" the tears now flow on her face and all I want to do is comfort her.

\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*NOSIPHO\*\*\*\*\*\*

My whole body is bruised, Musa has been taking care of me. We did do the cleansing ceremony and we named my son Bongani. Stan hasn't said anything to me yet but I received a call from my mother telling me that they received a letter from the Mthimkhulu family. I told her to give them a date that's a bit further because I'm still trying to figure out if this

guy is a good guy. My mother laughed and told me there won't be any better guy after what I did to Tokelo. Maybe my mother right, maybe I'm being punished.

"How are you feeling Sisi?" That's the first wife

"I'm better thanks" she looks at me for some time

"What did you feed that man" I frown

"Excuse me?"

"Zolani has never acted so barbaric to even beat you up in front of his beloved mother. Umuti phela has a way of turning indoda into an animal especially when you feed it to a powerful man like Zolani" I chuckle bitterly

"That's the problem with rural wives it's never their husband's fault. Sithelo or whatever they call you. If you have nothing nice to say then you can leave" she claps her hands ones laughing

"Rural wives? You will be joining us, if you can look outside the window now the

material for building your house has arrived." She says laughing and leaving the room. I've noticed that Musa is the reserved wife. She speaks when spoken to. Stan comes barging in

"Your family has given a date that's two months away. I'm sure you are the bloody reason for that"

"If I was the reason they would have rejected your request all together I don't know what you are talking about" he scoffs

"Speak to your mother to move up the date" I chuckle

"Do you see my face? It will take at least a month to recover. Take the time to re-evaluate your life Stan. You and I worked

when we were sneaking around. This polygamy thing won't work with me. Either kill me now like you promised me to. I might as well die, I left a good man for a woman beater and your first wife has the guts to accuse me of using muti on you. I'm not marrying you and I'm ready to die" I say looking at him straight in the eyes. He looks at me for some time then leaves banging the door.

<sup>&</sup>quot;He loves you" I chuckle

"For the longest time I wished to be you.

He told me about you the very first time
we met. He only got married because I
fell pregnant for him. It has always been
you, even Sithelo knows it, that's why
she's giving you so much attitude." I laugh

"If this is love I'd rather be single. I left my marriage for him only to find out that he

is married not to one but to two bloody wives I can't yoh." She nods

"Help me escape please" she shakes her head

"It would kill him, he is still añrgy with the whole abortion thing hence he is building a house for you here but trust me that man will be the one begging you to stay

with him in Joburg" this one is crazy I think this marriage is messing with her mental health. I'll find a way on my own.

\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*TSHEPO\*\*\*\*\*

They bring him in hand cuffed he smiles wide when he sees me and I can't help but smile too.

"Hello baby" I've gotten used him calling me that. The warden laughs and tells us that we have two hours after uncuffing him.

"I miss you" he smiles

"I miss you too" he looks at my wrist and laughs

"I see you found my watch collection" I smile

"Yeah and thanks again for letting me stay at your place it's beautiful but lonely I miss you" he walks towards me and kisses me. Just his touch gives me a boner and since I have fully accepted my feelings for him, I enjoy his every touch and kiss.

"How are things with your brothers?" I sigh

"They don't trust me but I don't blame them. At least Kopano is trying as for Thapelo he is distant"

"You tried to kill him and succeeded in killing his woman"

"I know I don't blame him for being skeptical. At least I see my son once a week, Kopano brings him over, you should meet the little champ he's amazing" he smiles

"Do you have kids?" He shakes his head

"You have a son now, he is boasting about having to daddies, imagine when there's three" he laughs and that alone is fucken awesome. I want him to be as happy as he makes me

"How's the trial?"

"Well I still don't know who my brother is because my case just magically disappeared into thin air" I say shaking my head

"I want to ask my brother to help get you out of here so we can be together freely not being timed like this" he frowns

"You know kopano came to ask me what is happening between us, they're going to ask questions"

"And I'm ready to tell them that I'm your baby and you are my man" his eyes pop

"Are you sure"

"I am, unless this was just a prison loving" he laughs throwing his head back

"You wouldn't have my house and car keys, or combination to my safe that's full of hard cash." Who knew that me Tshepo would have boyfriend allowance. He told me not to exceed 50k a month and he will know if I do.

"I'm serving life baby I know your brother has influence but not to get someone like me out." I hold both his hands

"We will take showers together and you'll make breakfast in bed for me. We will have arguments where I'll sleep in the guest room to cool off then sneak into our bedroom because I can't sleep without you cuddling me. We are going to have that I promise" we share a passionate kiss and I'm going to put my

heart out there, it doesn't make me less of a man to love another man.

After the visit I decide to go to Kopano's office to talk about getting Sgora out.

"And why would I do that?" He asks
looking at me straight in the eyes sipping
whiskey. Here goes nothing

"Because I love him okay, I'm gay I love him I've always been gay but I was too ashamed to live in my truth. I need him and...."

"Okay okay! I'll do it, he'll be out as soon as next week don't worry about it." I frown

"Next week? I hope you are not planning on pulling a Thabo Bester" he laughs

"No man, I'll speak to the president to give him a presidential pardon." I beam getting up and hugging him as I'm about to walk out I notice a red light dot on his white shirt. I shout

"Get down!!!" He looks confused I run to him and hug him turning him around

then I feel a bullet piercing through my chest and we both fall. Now the bullet came flying in

"Tshepo hold on man, Moletsane" he says holding my head

"I'm sorry please take care of my son and tell Sgora I love him" I feel myself drifting away as blood comes out of my mouth. "You fucken tell him yourself you hear me Tshepo" the shooting has seized the door opens and Thapelo comes rushing in

"Little brother fight please" I smile at him

"I love you" those were my last words as I welcomed the angel of death

\*Trafficked: A stolen destiny\*

\*CHAPTER 32\*

\*\*\*\*\*\*\*KOPANO\*\*\*\*\*\*\*

"Why the fuck are you stopping, fucken resuscitate him. Now!!!!" I roar

"Sir he is gone" the stupid paramedic says. Thapelo is in tears, why would Tshepo do this? He didn't have to take that bullet for me. He just found love, he just came out and finally embraced who he is.

"Find out who's behind this I want his head by tonight!" Mile nods leaving my office.

"Miles!" He turns to face me

"I want Sgora out of prison by tonight, I'll speak to the president about a pardon but for now I want him out" he nods and leaves

"Sir can we take the body" I nod wiping my tears.

"He tried to reach out to me but I was too busy being angry at him. I can't believe my little brother is gone. There was a time I wanted to kill him myself but I would trade places with him now"

Thapelo is really taking this hard

"Bree has been angry at me because of the whole Pablo saga, I hardly come to the office you know me but I couldn't stand Bree's mood swings and snide remarks. When he showed up here he looked so happy and in love. He humbled himself by asking me to help Sgora out of prison. He further confessed to being gay and being in love with Sgora" his eyes pop "Tshepo was gay? I didn't see this coming, this Sgora guy must have been something special." I smile

"You'll meet him tonight" he nods we look at each other for some time and have a heart to heart moment without saying a word

"We will avenge his death big bro" he says hugging me.

\*\*\*\*\*AT KOPANO'S HOUSE\*\*\*\*\*

Bree broke down and cried as soon as I told her what happened. she let me cuddle her until she fell asleep. I got out

of bed and went downstairs just then Miles walked in with Sgora.

"When Tshepo said he will speak to you about getting me out I didn't think it would be tonight" he says bro hugging me

"Where is he anyway?" He says looking around.

"He came to my office to ask me to release you because he is in love with you" the smile on his face matches the one my brother had, it's plain to see that they are in love.

"He took a bullet for me and died" he laughs

"I hate dark humour Kopano, don't play games with me. If this is some sick surprise Tshepo planned well tell him it's lame" he says getting serious

"I'm sorry I don't know what else to tell you. Tshepo is at the morgue as we speak, he took a bullet for me then asked me to tell you that he loves you" he sits on the couch then gets up then sits again. He buries his head on his hands. Thapelo Steve Miles Lisa and I are watching this

moment in silence then out of nowhere we he lets out a gut wrenching sob. Sgora is huge, has the rock's physique so imagine a big guy like that crying his lungs out. It's not a pretty sight. Everyone in the room sniffs in tears watching him cry. He cries for a while until he brings his head up with blood shot eyes

"Who do I have to kill to average his death?" He says looking deadly

"We are working on it, we need all hands on deck. Steve call the cook I need his contacts. We will find him but something tells me that it's Miguel Santos one of the Santos brothers if that's the case then he is a coward. He lurks in dark corners instead of showing himself"

"Sgora! Tshepo was our brother, we had our differences but God knows we loved him and he loved us too, he even took a bullet for me. I'm sorry for your loss but just know that from today onwards you are one of us. Tshepo would love that"

"I want to be the one to squeeze the life out of him. Does he know what he took from me? The plans we made. You might as well take me back inside after Killing

whoever is responsible. There's nothing here for me" he says getting up and pouring whiskey for himself. This is too sad.

\*\*\*\*\*\*\*BREE\*\*\*\*\*

I can't believe that Tshepo is no more, this feels like a dream, like I'm going to wake up any moment now. After kopano explained to me how he met Pablo to be honest I was grateful for the lengths he went to rescue me but I was also angry that he kept that away from me. When he came in this afternoon I was ready to put on my grumpy face on until I noticed his blood shot red eyes. I knew there and then that something was wrong but I couldn't have predicted or imagined that it was Tshepo's death. It cut deep because

he died saving Kopano, what would have become of me if I lost Kopano? I don't even want to imagine. Today all roads lead to freedom park, I just have to be prepared for the drama Mme Moletsane is about to unleash. I wouldn't be surprised if she wants me to sit on the mattress. You can never know with that one.

"Are you ready" we are in the car and to get out. The yard is already full. I nod, we get into the yard and as I pass I hear whispers but I'm not bothered

"Kopano kore we must wait for you wena you are the celebrity of this house. You know there's a family meeting" one of Kopano's uncle says. I decide to go to the kitchen and help the ladies making tea.

"Did you go greet your mother in law? She's sitting on the mattress on your behalf" I knew it, I decide to keep quiet and go to Tshepo's old room where his mother is sitting on the mattress looking into space, she really shouldn't be alone. She looks broken.

"I blame myself" she says and I decide to keep quiet and listen

"Tshepo was different and instead of allowing him to be himself, I made it seem like it was wrong and disgusting simply because I thought that it's my late husband who taught him how to be different you know. I encouraged him to marry you and when you disappeared I feared that he will embrace that part of himself and so I encouraged him to marry Tumi. My son died unhappy, my son died in the closet" she says breaking down

"I will never forgive myself"

"Mama when Tshepo died, his final moments he told his brother that he is gay and that he is in love" she stops crying and looks at me

"Really?" I nod

"You will meet the guy probably on the day of the funeral mama Tshepo was happy. Kopano can attest to this" she smiles

"Thank you my daughter and I'm happy that you and Kopano found each other" okay grieving is making her soft. \*\*\*\*\*\*BOITUMELO\*\*\*\*\*

I'm wearing a body huging floral print dress I got at Mr price for an affordable price. I look beautiful i must say and have short hair is low maintenance and I love it. 6 pm on the dot pastor Tokelo arrived looking very nice and smelling great. He opens the door for me and I enter gosh

bo ndaba they are already sending WhatsApp messenges.

"You look beautiful"

" thank you"

"I hope you love braai meat" I chuckle

"Who doesnt" he shrugs

"Maybe you are those sushi and caviar eating chics" I chuckle.

We get to tintys near Southgate mall and we order a lot of meat, they Braai it as we wait, they are playing amapiano and there's alcohol sold. I was shocked, pastor!

"You look surprised?" He says

"Pleasantly surprised"

"I want us to talk without you feeling uncomfortable. This place is chilled so I want you to relax" I nod

"Tumi I am a man of God but none the less I am a man. We are old enough to know right from wrong, I don't want a scandalous affair with you, I respect you and I respect my calling with that being said. I can't wait any longer, I want to marry you before I fuck you senseless I'm afraid if we wait any longer then you'll find yourself under me screaming my name. Will you be my wife Tumi?" Yoh! Do I not cross my legs. My clit is already vibrating. I just nod not trusting my voice

"I'll send a letter to your family as soon as possible"

"I'll marry you but you know my situation, have you seen any family member coming to visit me? Let's skip the whole lobola thing please" he smiles

"In two weeks time we are going to sign and I'm anouncing it on Sunday that you are my fiance," I laugh

"A fiancé without a ring" he reaches into his pocket and takes out a beautiful single diamond ring" I cover my mouth with my hand

"Wow really pastor Tokelo"

"Yes Tumi and since I'm going to be your husband call me just Tokelo or baby, even honey is fine" I giggle as he slides the ring into my finger. God I am so happy

\*\*\*\*\*\*\*NOSIPHO\*\*\*\*\*

I just spoke to Bree and she told me the sad news about Tshepo's passing. This is my opportunity to go back to jozi and to pack my bags. I'm going to ask my dad to ask for a meeting with Tokelo's family and I'm going to beg him for a second chance. I know that he loves me and he has probably been waiting for me like the

prodigal son to return, that man of God loves me God bless his kind heart.

"I need to get back to jozi, Bree called and she said she needs me" he nods

"We leave in the afternoon" I'm tempted to roll my eyes but I don't

"I know I messed up Nosi but you and I are meant to be, we are just going through a test in our love story but this gangster loves you" not now shame a few weeks ago that would have melted my heart but not anymore. I'm done with your gangster ass and I'm getting Baba mfundisi back. I fake a smile looking outside the window.

\*CHAPTER 33\*

\*\*\*\*\*\*\*BREE\*\*\*\*\*

She came as soon as I told her about Tshepo's passing. She deserves to be here as his ex-wife and the mother of his late daughter. We are busy making tea for all the guests who have come to sympathize with the family. Everywhere we go people gossip about us, well me the most but I don't care. Tumi has this beautiful glow on her, she really has changed.

"If looks could kill we would be dead by now. Have you seen the way the aunts are looking at us?" She says shaking her head

"At least you came today, imagine me who's been coming since day before yesterday. All the snide remarks about

how I should be the one sitting on the mattress" she chuckles

"But you got divorced mos"

"Yep and he married you so you should be the one on the mattress" I say laughing "Wearing another man's ring I don't think so" only then I notice the huge rock on her finger

"When?" She giggles, no wonder the glow shame she's in love.

"Last night, he is going to announce to the church this coming Sunday. I'm so nervous but happy at the same time" "I am super happy for you. You deserve all the happiness" she looks down

"Do I? After everything I did to you Bree do I really deserve the happily ever after? I keep thinking that this is a dream and that I'll wake up and realize that people like me do get to ride off into the sunset" I hold both her hands

"Everyone makes mistakes, Tumi and stop crucifying yourself. As a woman of faith who's about to be married to a pastor you need to walk in faith not in shame my sister" her eyes glitter with tears and she attacks me with a hug

"Is it too soon to say that I love you because I do" I chuckle

"I love you too sis, I've always loved you. Now comes the hard part" she frowns

"Getting our brother to forgive you" she nods

"Will you be my witness when Tokelo and I get married, we are doing a court wedding then a small lunch. That's if it won't be awkward for Nosi" I chuckle

"Tell me the date and time I will definitely be there. Nosi is in KZN being introduced to the family as we speak, she didn't want the pastor so she has no right to be awkward about this" she nods as we continue with the dishes. She looks different, she looks more like me.

We just got home from KZN, the entire ride he was busy apologising and telling me how things are going to work out between the four of us. I just lost any love and respect I ever had for him. No man has ever laid his hands on me not even my father, all I want is to cry in Tokelo's arms and tell him how sorry I am. He really was good to be but I was too blind to see it. I was blinded by old feelings and

the forbidden fruit nonsense, but I know I will win my husband back especially when he sees my bruised face.

"Baby I'm going to Kopano's place, there's something we need to deal with?" I nod

"I hope you are not planning to go anywhere with that bruised face, I'll buy you some ointment that will help the

bruises fade away faster" I nod and he kisses my forehead

"We are going to be alright. I love you" I nod and he pecks my lips before leaving. I waited for an hour before driving out. I got to my house and nothing has changed, he still keeps the spare key under the big pot plant next to the door. I get in and look around. There's no sign of a woman staying here not that there

would be but a girl can never be too sure.

I decide to cook for him in the meantime,

I make his favourite oxtail stew and
savoury rice. I'm done cooking and I set
the table as I wait for him to walk in.

"It smells good in here, why did you insist on us eating at the restaurant when you cooked already" I know that voice. My heart beats fast but I remain sitting at the table for two that I set up

"I didn't cook, someone is in here maybe it's my mom" they both get to the dining room hand in hand looking shocked seeing me

"Nosipho what are you doing here?"
I should have known that this bitch would use this opportunity to her advantage

"So Tshepo is dead now you are off to your next victim, Tumi why can't you get a man of your own and leave other people's husbands?" She blinks rapidly

"Nosipho you will refrain from talking to my fiance like that. I am not your husband and now that the man you snuck around with is showing you flames you think you can come back to me? I want you to leave now!" I chuckle

"I know I hurt you but you can't possibly be choosing this evil woman, she trafficked her own friend for a man. She has always wanted what her friends had. She's evil"

"From where I'm standing Nosi, you are the evil one. You left your matrimonial home and laid with another man over and over again. Killed an innocent soul before it's even born, you made a fool of me over and over again. Now here you stand judging another as if you are a saint. I won't ask you again, go back to your spontaneous gangster and leave me and my wife to be in peace" to say I'm hurt and humiliated is an understatement

"I wonder what would your parents and your beloved church think about having

mamsgebengu as mamuruti" I say walking out but I do a dramatic turn

"Wena I wouldn't start celebrating if I were you. You can't build a home on another woman's tears" I say leaving, I get inside my car and I sob. Tumi is a bitch. I connect my phone to the Bluetooth and call Bree

*******PHONE	CONVO*	*****
--------------	--------	-------

"Hey are you back yet?" That's the first thing she says when she answers her phone

"I'm back""

"How was the Mthimkhulu family?" I sigh

"I want my husband back, Stan is not at all who I thought he was and now Tumi sunk her claws deep into Tokelo's skin, I should have read between the lines when he texted me months ago about her brat's death"

"You knew that Tumi's daughter, Kgatli's sister died but you kept quiet? Okay that's not the answer I'm expecting

"Yes I knew but last time I checked Tumi is the enemy, the back stabbing bitch that stole four years of your life" she remains silent

"Are you there?"

"Look Nosi I love you, you have been a good friend to me so I'll be very honest with you. Tumi and Tokelo were single people who found love and comfort in each other's arms. Tumi didn't destroy your marriage, you did that by yourself. Now lay off insulting Tumi because she's not the problem here. You said it yourself that you don't love Tokelo so let him be happy. Even if he marries the devil himself that's none of your business. You have a

degree in psychology get a job and move on or stick it out with Stan but whatever you choose, leave my sister out of it. I have to get going bye" she hung up on me, since when does she refer to Tumi as her sister? Mxm I'm not letting this go. I'm going to tell his parents about the Jezebel Tokelo is about to marry.

\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*

Miles has confirmed that 20 mexicans entered the country last week via a private jet and landed in lanseria airport. Thanks to the corrupt officials at the airport they were able to get into our country with deadly weapon.

"My team on the ground say they sported them at maboneng in the CBD." Our resident chef says. He has boys all over who sell drugs for him. It's easy to locate anyone through his cockroaches, that's what he calls them anyway.

"Tell them to tail them until they get to where they booked for accommodation. We don't want to attack at a busy place

like that. We don't want casualties" I look over at Sgora and he looks lost in thought

"Are you okay?" He shakes his head

"Eish my whole place smells of him. The sheets, his clothes are nicely packed. He fucken wrote me notes" he says chuckling and handing me one and I read it

"Haaa Sgora you act all macho kanti your name is Thando" with a smily face.

"There lots of those notes, some he says he's lonely and wishes I was out of jail" a lone tear escapes his eye.

"I'm sorry man" he nods getting up and leaving the room.

"This is fucked up!!" Thapelo says smashing a glass of whiskey on the wall.

\*CHAPTER 34\*

\*\*\*\*\*\*\*TSHEPO'S FUNERAL\*\*\*\*\*\*

\*NARRATED\*

Three things are certain in life. Time, change and death. We cannot turn back the hands of time nor can we stop change, well! death is inevitable but it doesn't hurt any less. Nobody in the world can say the right words to ease the pain of losing a loved one. A mother burying her child, a brother burying a brother, a friend burying another, a son burying a father and lover burying a lover. Nothing can ever prepare you for

the pain and regret you feel after losing a loved one to death, you often question whether you showed them enough appreciation, adoration and love. You wonder if they knew how much they meant to you. Did you make their life pleasant while they walked this earth? You will never see them again, you will never see their smile or touch their hand. You will never hear their voice or their laughter. Where did go? Why does it feel like they just disappeared into nothingness like they never existed at all. Death is inevitable but it doesn't hurt any less.

Tshepo's mother sitting at the front row drowning in sorrow, full of regret and guilt. In her heart she feels that she could have done better as a mother, from the moment his father first molested her first son Kopano, she could have seeked for help instead of sweaping it under the

carpet. She wonders how life could have been if only she chose her children when it mattered most.

We see Kopano standing near the casket wearing a black tuxedo suit and black shades. He stands tall with his broad shoulders and his broad chest. He feels that Tshepo should be the one burying him and not the other way around. He feels like he has wasted too much time

being angry at his little brother when he could have used that time to know him better, to understand why he did things in a certain way. He now feels that Tshepo's outrageous behaviour was actually a cry for help.

Thando Mazibuko walks in staring at the casket. He sits at the back and takes off his shades. He has been crying the whole night. Never did he think he would find

love especially in another man. Sgora was never gay until he was sentenced to life in prison. He would indulge in ass fucking just for the of releasing sexual tension but he never anticipated that he would fall for a man. When Kopano asked him to rough up his brother her did say that he must not rape him but he must put the fear of god inside of him but when he laid his eyes on Tshepo something inside of him moved. He found himself wanting to not only rescue Tshepo but to love and boy did he love him.

"It was beautiful service and people had beautiful things to say about Tshepo"
Bree says to Mamoletsane.

"It was, my daughter please call the guy who was Tshepo's lover if he is still around. I'd like to have a word with him" Bree nods and walks out of the bedroom.

Moments later Bree walk in with a big buff man who looks broken. Anyone can tell that he has been crying, his blood shot red eyes give him away.

"Mrs Moletsane you asked to see me" she smiles and shows him a seat

"Bree leave us" Bree nods and exits the room.

"I know you loved my son, I can see it in your eyes. I just wanted to thank you for loving him and for making him happy in his last days. I've always made him feel like being gay is wrong and dirty but I'm glad in his last moment he got to be himself and love a man freely" Sgora nods

"If you don't mind, can you tell me about his last moments?" Sgora sighs

"We were planning to live together, he went on about us taking showers together and me making breakfast in bed for him. He was determined to fix his relationship with his brothers and he wanted to introduce me to his son." Sgora says swallowing

"Well son, you might have lost my son but you have gained a mother in me. This was Tshepo's favourite watch. He bought it just after he graduated, he gave it to me to keep, he said one day he wanted to give it to his son but I think you should have it" Sgora shakes his head

"Mama don't you think Kgatli should have it?"

"I know you might think I'm crazy but
Tshepo wants you to have a piece of him
with you. Please take it" Sgora doesn't
want to disappoint her so he takes it and
hugs her as she cries in his arms

## \*THE NEXT DAY\*

\*\*\*\*\*\*\*TOKELO\*\*\*\*\*

Today is the day we let the congregation know about Tumi and I getting married. I hope everything goes well because after Nosipho's outburst I was kind of worried about how Tumi would handle this. My parents are here as well, they didn't like the idea of me getting married so soon after divorcing Nosipho but I made clear to them that I love this woman and I'm willing to face whatever may come my way. I also explained to my father that I do not want to fall into sin with her or any other woman. My father is the one

ministering today as my guest. He has his own church in free state but he took his time to come see his makoti.

"That was a very powerful sermon by the one and only moruti Modise, who happens to be my father and the best man I know" I look over at Bree and she looks nervous

"My brothers and sisters six months ago I stood before you letting you know about to the divorce I was going through. It doesn't look good for a man of God to be going through such but the bible says when your left hand hinders you from doing the work of the lord then cut it off and that's what I did. It was a very difficult time of my life but by the grace of God and with all your support I made it out stronger and unshakable. It is with great pleasure to announce that the lord has

smiled apon me once again and has given my heart a home" the church women started alulating while the men whistled

"Boitumelo please come forward" Tumi stood up walking to the altar looking all shy

"I have found my missing rib, this is
Boitumelo Masilo and your soon to be
mamoruti" everyone clapped their hands

looking genuinely happy. I see her waving at someone. It's her sister Bree, I'm glad she came to support her.

"Wow! You are busy clapping your hands for an ex convict" Nosi shouts walking in almost missing a step, I think she's drunk. She walks up to the altar, one of the ushers tries to stop her "Don't touch me wena masaga" she climbs on stage and grabs a mic from the band on stage.

"Hello! Remember me? Your precious and most stylish mamfundisi. Yoh guys yah neh okay I'm an adulterer I admit but this one is a biggest home wrecking whore." I try to grab the mic but she moves from me

"Tokelo let me tell my truth and hopefully it will set you free from making the biggest mistake of your life. As I was saying before I was rudely interrupted ke higher grade English I'm sure Tumi needs a dictionary. Tumi is a whore and she sold her sister to become a prostitute like her. She then helped look for her sister while she knew exactly where she was just so that she could have her sister's family. She was sent to jail and even became pregnant for the husband but God does not play he took the child away from her

now she went to a very powerful sangoma to make me lust after my ex so that I can leave my marriage. She is a witch like her mother Pretty she was a witch too. She wants to turn our beloved mfundisi to a yes man like comissioner Thabo he was not even her real father. This woman is bad news" she drops the mic like she just finished rapping.

Tumi is crying in silence as everyone is looking her. I try to say something but

Bree stops me and walks up to the altar grabbing my mic.

"Everything that Nosi said might be true well I don't know about her delusional excuse for sleeping around when she was married but she was right about what my sister did by selling me to prostitution. I won't make an excuse for her but we were both different people then. Her actions revealed a lot of things, my marriage was flawed, thanks to her I'm

with the love of my life. I have seen a change in her that only confirms to me that God is working on her. If you want a perfect mamuruti then good luck finding one. No one is perfect, we all make mistakes. I have forgiven my sister, God has forgiven my sister and you would be damn lucky to have her as a mamuruti eish sorry for swearing" she gives me the mic and goes to hug Tumi who is in tears. I watch as my parents hug her too followed my Mme Lihle and the rest of

women and Nosi storms out livid. The devil is a liar

\*\*\*\*\*\*NOSIPHO\*\*\*\*\*

I failed, my own friend turned against me.
I looked like the devil and she was made
out to be a saint. She's forgiven for her

mistakes. What about me, Why am I being punished? I made a mistake too. It's over for me here. My life is over I might as well kill myself, there's nothing left for me to live for, I humiliated myself and when my parents find out about this, they will be very disappointed in me. I wish I can turn back the hands of time, I would cherish my husband. I get into the bath tub and I take a very sharp razor blade and slit my wrists. I drank a full bottle of wine so it won't take long for me to die. I

didn't even see the need to write a suicide note I bet nobody cares.

\*\*\*\*\*\*\*STANLEY\*\*\*\*\*

After Bree called me asking me to check up on Nosi I drove home as fast as I could leaving the crew busy gearing up to go kill some mexicans. Bree didn't give me much detail but she said she's worried about the state she was in when she saw her. I must have pushed her over the edge with the beating and the whole wives issue. I get to the house and run upstairs. I find her laying in the bathtub lifeless. I hurry scooping her out, I check her pulse and thank god it's there. I cover up with a robe and carry her to the car

with tears blinding my vision. I lay her at the back seat and she tries to speak

"Shh don't talk baby save your energy"

"Let me die please he won't take me back, my husband won't take me back" I clench my jaws

"It's okay don't talk baby" we get to the hospital and they rush to assist her as I fill out the paperwork. I wait for what seems like a lifetime

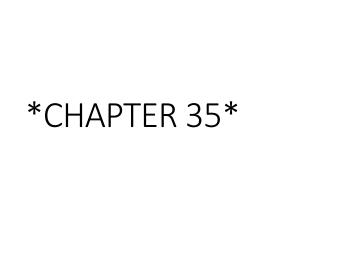
"Nosipho Mthimkhulu" I said she's my wife hence the surname.

"Your wife is going to be okay, she just needs a blood transfusion since she lost a

lot of blood. The baby is okay too" I don't let him finish

"The baby?"

"Yes your wife is 9 weeks pregnant" tears form in my eyes. She was already pregnant when I beat her up. No wonder she wants to leave me. I'm an animal!



They are staying at a guest house in orange groove. They booked the entire place which makes it easier for us to attack them without worrying about hurting civilians. Usually in situations like this I would send the army or even the hawks but I want to be there when those

Mexican scums die. Sgora and Thapelo look deadly, they are hungry for blood. We have the element of surprise because as soon as we burst through the door they looked spooked.

"qué está sucediendo? (What's going on)

"Qué està sucediendo es mataste a mi hermano (what's going on is that you killed my brother) I say shooting whoever that was talking between the eye.

"I'm looking for your boss" they are about 8 in the house we have gathered them into the dining room. They are all sitting as if they are waiting for the last supper.

"Your boss, you know your jefe" my Spanish is rusty and these sons of a bitches are not not making it easy " no hablo ingles (I don't speak English)" Sgora huffs then takes out a knife

"Tshepo was fascinated with knives now this is the only language you understand" he guts them like a chef gutting a fish and only leaves one

"Do you hablo ingles now?"

"Si"

"Where is your boss?"

"He went to meet with some people, the Khumalos señor" he also guts him, pulling out his insides with a knife. We let him be, he needs this to feel satisfied.

"Miles, Steve please clean this up. We need to pay a visit to the Khumalos"

Thapelo shakes his head

"I thought Mongezi and Njabulo are smarter than this." All roads lead to the Khumalos.

After cleaning the mess at the guest house we made our way to the Khumalos, Lisa chose to be our sniper while we entered the estate. Sgora is using knives to kill. We get inside the house without alarming whoever is inside and find them in the dining room having dinner like old friends. I'm starting to think the Khumalos helped them enter the country undetected.

"And we are not invited to dinner, I thought we were friends" Mongezi looks like he's seen a ghost.

"Oh and to answer your question
Khumalo. I am the Shadow and you chose
to busk in the sun with my enemy"

"Is that why you didn't come to my brother's funeral? I thought you were

friends?" Thapelo says looking at Njabulo but he looks down.

"Mexican scums, you have been awfully quiet over there" there's about 10 of them. This must have been a serious discussion, held over South Africa cuisine.

"I don't have time for this, I miss my cell in maximum security prison so please don't bore me with the language barrier shit and start talking. I want to know two things

1. Who ordered the hit and 2. Who pulled the trigger?" Sgora says looking impatient, I guess he really wants to go back to prison or it's just grief talking.

"You killed my brothers and for that you have to pay" ahh! The culprit reveals himself

"You must be Miguel Santos"

"In the flesh" he chuckles arrogantly

"And who pulled the trigger?" Sgora asks and Santos points at himself. We. Miguel is those big mexicans, he is wearing blue jeans and a white vest. He has tattoos all over his body and is wearing all of his bling around his neck and on his fingers.

He is those typical gang leaders we see in movies. Bald head and all.

"Let's go, you and me tough guy, looks like you have a lot of anger towards me." He says looking at Sgora.

I look over at Sgora and he nods. We start shooting each and every mexican except for the Khumalos and Miguel. "Let's play" Sgora says forming fists."

\*\*\*\*\*\*\*BREE\*\*\*\*\*

After the whole incident at church, I was very worried about Nosi. She looked

broken so I decided to call Stan. I don't know what is happening with my friend but the Nosi I know would never hurt a fly. It's like she redirected all her anger and disappointment to Tumi which is not fair. It was hard to choose a side but being in Mexico taught me to own my truth no matter how bitter it is, anyway Stanley did get back to me and told me that Nosi tried to commit suicide so I'm at the hospital to see her. I get inside her ward and I find Stanley sitted on the chair staring at her sleeping.

"Hi" I say whispering, he nods. He looks like a mess. This man is going through the most. Nosi opens her eyes and smiles

"Friend you came" I nod, I didn't expect this welcome

"Is Tokelo coming too? I have the best news for him" I frown and look over at Stan

"Don't spoil the surprise but I'll tell you because I'm too excited' she squills sitting up

"I'm pregnant! My husband and I are having a baby, Tokelo is going to be so

happy. We have been trying for a baby with no luck" i whisper at Stan

."what's going on here?" He swallows

"The doctor says she's having a nervous breakdown" shit! She's blocking out everything that happened and only choosing the reality she wants to live in.

"Bree please get my husband for me" I sigh

"Sweetheart do you remember what brought you here?" She shakes her head

"Do you remember how your wrist got hurt?" She shakes her head

"Do you remember that you and Tokelo are divorced?" She burst out laughing

"Tokelo and I are soulmates. We would never get divorced, why would a good man like him divorce me? We promised each other forever and I know he would never break my heart, he is my safe place" she says rubbing her tummy and all this while Stan is looking at her with glossy eyes.

"I'm going to call Tokelo okay?" She beams and I signal Stan to follow me outside.

"What did you do to her? I know this has nothing to do with her previous marriage. Something triggered this behaviour, she was okay until she went to KZN and I can see the bruises on her face" he looks up trying to stop tears from falling

"I have two wives" I gasp as if I'm being kicked in the stomach

"I didn't tell her about them and when she found out about them she freaked out and tried to end things, I ....I.. Bree you know how much I love Nosi she's my world, since from the time you guys were in varsity." I scoff

"I'm waiting for the part where you tell me how she got those bruises" he pinches the bridge of his nose

"I got so angry when she wanted to leave me. I thought she would understand where I'm coming from so I beat her up, I regret it with all my heart. This is my fault and the doctor recommended that she goes to a mental wellness center because she lost touch with reality"

I chuckle

"Of course she lost touch with reality, her reality is too fucked up. Imagine leaving a good man for a lying polygamous abusive man after sacrificing everything for him even your dignity"

"I know I messed up okay but you have to believe me, I love Nosi so much. It's always been her Bree I just had to fulfill a promise my father made to my first wife's father but I swear I don't know what got into me I just saw red when she wanted to leave me but I will fix this. I will get her the best treatment" I sigh

"I can recommend a few places but Stan, if you are not going to stick it out through the long haul then walk away right now. I will take care of her because if you and your wives hurt her I swear I'll make Kopano beat you up" he laughs as if I'm making a joke

"I love Nosi and I know it won't be easy to earn her trust but I'm not going anywhere"

\*MTHIMKHULU HOMESTEAD\*

"You always taste sweet Sithelo Sam esihle" Sithelo giggles

"Shongololo don't enjoy me too much phela I want to see more results, I want to hear that Zolani killed that woman" he chuckles

"You still doubt me after the beating she got in front of you? That is only the beginning. When he looks at her he's going to be repulsed"

"Music to my ears" she says giggling like a school

"One more round phela hau" she laughs

"You want want Mamthimkhulu to walk in on us" he chuckles

"I'm the family sangoma I can always say that I was sent by the ancestors to soften your waist" she hits him playfully while laughing. "Make it quick Shongololo" she says parting her legs.

\*CHAPTER 36\*

\*\*\*\*\*\*BOITUMELO\*\*\*\*\*

Today is the day that Tokelo and I say I do to each other. I am so excited, even though I was married before but this truly feels like my very first time. I love Tokelo but above that I respect him. He is a man of honour and integrity.

I'm wearing a white flowy chiffon dress and gold gladiator sandals. My hair is short and I applied light makeup. Bree walks into the living room looking beautiful in a denim dress and Nike sneakers. She's the one who organised transport to the court.

"Are you ready to get hitched sis?" I nod blushing

"You look beautiful by the way there's only one thing missing" she says handing me a small box and I open it

"Oh my gosh Bree these are beautiful" I say admiring a pair of diamond stud earrings.

"Now let's go get you married." I turn to look at mme Lihle and the other church women.

"Mama I'll meet at the pastor's house ne" she smiles

"You mean at your house" I giggle.

\*AT TOKELO'S HOUSE\*

"Congratulations bana Baka( my children) you both have been married before and you know that marriage is no child's play.

Make God the thread that holds your marriage together and I promise that you will always overcome the challenges that come with being married." Mme Modise says lifting a glass of champagne

"To Mr and Mrs Modise" they all lift up their glasses."

"I can't wait for all these people to leave, I want you all to myself" Tokelo Whispers in my ear making me blush.

\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*

I have been getting this overwhelming feeling of disgust whenever I see Nosi. She's still in hospital but today they are moving her to vista clinic in Pretoria it's highly recommended by both Bree and the doctor who is treating Nosi. It's not easy on the pocket but I don't care. I just want her to be well again, I love Nosi with all my heart but sometimes I feel like choking the hell out of her. Especially when she goes on and on about her ex husband. Each time I feel like killing her I

go out and have a smoke then I come back feeling better.

"I think this is men made" I'm with Thapelo at my place.

"What do you mean?"

"Someone is making you hate her using muti" I frown

"You have never laid a hand on her or any other woman but all of a sudden you beat the one person you'd literally die for.

Remember how much you cried when you heard she got married before you could ask her to be your second wife? You went into a dark place, Kopano was even thinking of cutting you loose" I nod it's

true it doesn't make sense why I would suddenly hate on Nosi like that.

"Our family sangoma is in KZN and now it's not a good time to be traveling. Nosi needs me, she's going to Pretoria today so I'll be staying at my apartment that side"

"Did Kopano approve that?" I nod

"He said I must take all the time I need, Sgora will hold the fort for me"

"I know someone at pimville Soweto. He is highly recommended. He's the one who helped me when one of my fuck buddies tempered with the performance of Moletsane." I chuckle.

"Can we go now before I got to Pretoria?" He nods.

\*Pimville Soweto\*

It's packed, I don't have the patience to wait long to see this man. Thapelo calls one of the initiates and hands him a stack of money. Minutes later we are called inside, leaving behind people who've been here for hours. As soon as we enter the ndumba the man gives me a bucket and tells me to drink it's content then whatever they fed me will come out on its own. I do as instructed. After drinking the 10 litres of the brown water. I start vomitting, when I'm done he calls me inside.

"Mthimkhulu you are very strong, you should have killed the woman you love by now but because the love you have for her is very strong. You have been able to stop yourself, now take this, put it in you water when you bath and make sure you let it dry on its own. And take this, drink it twice a day. You will be fine and the one to help your wife from her mental illness will soon show herself. Do not tell anyone especially your family about your wife's

pregnancy. Your ancestors hid her pregnancy from your family sangoma for a reason." I nod

"Makhosi who's behind this" he chuckles

"I see you are no ordinary man, you have a mean temper and you are capable of taking human life. The people responsible for this will suffer and confess right before

dying." I knew it, these sangomas never want to reveal names but it's fine, as long as I won't hurt Nosi.

\*\*\*\*\*KOPANO\*\*\*\*\*

"Yes oh baby ah!!!" I thrust into her as we are laying side by side. I'm softly caressing her breasts as she mumbles foreign words. I go deeper and as I lift her legs up she squirts all over crying out in pleasure. After a couple of deep strokes we both cum screaming each other's names

"That was epic" she says with her eyes closed.

"I know I've been distant lately, I just want to thank you for your patience and understanding. You never question my ins and outs, you never nag me and you allow me to deal with Tshepo's death my way. I'd like to thank you for that" Bree has really been amazing throughout this whole ordeal. I believe with ally heart that she is my soul mate.

At the Khumalos Sgora fought one on one with Miguel and lets just say that even his brothers won't be able to recognise him in hell. Sgora did a number on him then he turned and killed both the Khumalos. We let him be because this was very personal for him but we did get our pleasure from watching as Sgora slaughtered them. He wanted to return to prison but I told him that Tshepo would

be very disappointed in me if I put him back in jail. He is our brother now and we will do anything to make him feel like part of the Shadow family.

"I know you and Thapelo are not saints. I wanted you to do whatever it is you needed to do then come back to us." I kiss her forehead

"I'm back and I'm not going anywhere" she smiles

"I sent a letter to the Modiri's, your grandmother Maleburu answered, the negotiations will be held at your old house in two weeks time I am sorry I didn't run this by you but I want to wife you as in yesterday." She laughs

"I'm waiting for the proposal, some women got proposed to in Zanzibar" I asked Sne to marry me there, I even forgot about it. Women can be petty

"You are not allowed to travel, you are 8 months pregnant. How about I pay lobola for you then we can plan your show stopper proposal after the baby is born" she thinks for a while then holds out her hand for a handshake

"Deal" we both say.

"I love you MaModiri" she blushes

"I love you Ntate Moletsane" she says giggling.

## \*MTHIMKHULU HOMESTEAD\*

\*NARRATED\*

"Shongololo vuka maan(wake up) I can't believe you overslept, what if Mamthimkhulu walks in here hai get Tu" but shongololo doesn't move an inch

"Hai wena vuka" nothing, he is snoring so clearly he is not dead but this human being is not moving an inch. She gets up and pours a glass of ice cold water on him but shongololo doesn't move. She starts

to panic and she hits him with anything she can find but shongololo is still.

"Yoh! What the hell is this? Shongololo what are you doing to me? How am I going to explain you being here? Please wake up" an Idea pops into her mind and she burns sage calling the bhengu ancestors. Her late father was a traditional healer so she has an Idea of how to communicate with the ancestors but her knowledge is no use because the sleeping beast is not moved by her numerous attempts to wake him up.

"Makoti!" Her heart beats fast

"Ma!" She says walking out making sure that she locks her bedroom.

"Ma!" I say entering the main house but I'm met by initiates and shongololo's wife

"Makoti, shongololo is missing and his wife says the ancestors led them to this place. I tried to explain that there's no way he can be here, have you seen him perhaps" the way his wife is looking at me yoh!

"I.... I don't know, ask Musa" the lady chuckles

"You don't know but you reek of his scent. Woman show me which bedroom you kept my husband in or your husband finding out about your whoring ways will be the least of your problems" I swallow hard, one of his initiates starts shaking and sneezing mumbling things I don't know

"Yebo mkhulu khuluma ngilalele( talk I'm listening)" he then turns pointing his finger at me

"O Bhengu ancestors say that ubaba is sleeping a spiritual sleep and he is in this yard" oh my god these ancestors are bloody snitches

\*CHAPTER 37\*

\*\*\*\*\*\*TOKELO\*\*\*\*\*

She is here laying next to me. The overwhelming love that I feel in my heart makes me want to get down on my knees and worship the almighty God. Just to thank him for sending me this angel, Boitumelo is just a beautiful work of God, I see God working in her and through her. My faith in God has more than improved beyond what it was before because of her

and now without a doubt in my mind I believe that everything I went through in my previous marriage and everything she did that was evil in the past led us to this very moment. God knew and allowed certain things to happen for his glory. After our friends and family bid us farewell I couldn't help but rush her to the bedroom and consummate our marriage and it's safe to say that it was worth the wait. This woman is warm and tight, I think I'm addicted to her lady part because wow! And there's that thing she

does when I'm about to slide out, she locks my member in making me hard all over again. I have been going in and out of her the whole night but I still want more of her sweet honey pot. She's sleeping but I slide my member inside of her and she starts to moan with her eyes closed. I slam into her and she opens her eyes smiling. I slide out and flip her around taking her from behind. I ram into her as I speak in tongues guys my wife is going to be the death of me.

"Oh Tokelo!" She moans as I'm deep stroking her. She's moving her waist meeting my thrusts I'm telling you if this is not cloud 9 then I don't know what is. I place both my hands on her neck pulling her up and she screams in pleasure. I tighten as I'm about to cum, she reaches her climax and I shortly follow her.

She's dead tired after that last round she collapsed with her ass still up. After carefully laying her on my chest I kiss her forehead and whisper I love you right before dosing off. It's been an epic magical night.

I'm so thirsty I feel like I've been walking for a long time, I look around my surroundings and I do not recognise this place. This place looks serene and peaceful, there are beautiful huge trees and a flowing river indicating that there's a waterfall nearby. I decide to drink the water from the flowing river but I

somehow trip and fall into the water. My heartbeat accelerates, I try to swim but the river current is pulling me towards the waterfall faster than I can swim. I'm fighting with the current and I'm busy calling the name of Jesus. I'm praying for God to save me. I finally reach the waterfall and I fall into it, the fall seems to last longer and I'm holding my breath until I feel my body splash into the water. I'm in deep water but surprisingly I'm breathing just fine. I relax my body and I sink deeper and deeper until I reach the

bottom of the river. It looks like normal land so I walk around while praying for God to rescue me.

"My daughter" I turn and find ntate

Modiri standing behind me with his
reading glasses and a big smile on his face

"Am I dead?" He chuckles

"No my daughter, you were going through a purification process. You are now ready to use your gift" I frown

"What gift ntate Modiri?" He smiles

"I am so proud of you Boitumelo, you have come a long way from that girl who was fed poison by her mother. You have

always had a good heart, you just needed to be refined. That boy loves you and together you shall accomplish great things" I hug him

"I'm sorry for the pain I put you through ntate Modiri" he wipes my tears

"I'm sorry you never got to experience your father's love but I'm here for you and your siblings. Use your gift to bring

healing to others" I just nod while smiling then a little girl walks up and signals ntate Modiri to lift her up.

"Me and Bontle ba modimo are doing just fine and don't worry soon you and your husband will celebrate" I look at my daughter who's a little grown from the last time I saw her.

"Take care of both Bree and Thabiso, you are their older sister after all. I love you ngwanake" i hug them both until I feel the water current, pulling me away from them. Ntate Modiri waves good bye so does Bontle.

"Baby are you still alive?" I feel someone shaking me gently.

"Baby" I open myself and find my gorgeous husband holding a tray of food.

"I swear I thought I killed you" I chuckle

"You almost did, my nuna hurts" he laughs but it's true. I thought I'm getting a one trick pony man of God type who was missionary style all the way kanti I'm getting undercover Christian Grey, my throat hurts

"Did I go overboard?" I shake my head,
God knows I love the things this man was
doing to me.

"Your neck is a little bruised I'm sorry" I touch my neck and my mind trails back to when he was hitting me doggy style and I blush remembering the pleasure I felt

"It's nothing don't worry maybe next time we can use a tie and a safe word" he grins like an idiot

"My kinky wife Madoda"I chuckle

"Baby today I'm meeting with Bree and my brother for lunch"

"Yeah I remember, you can take my car.

I'm not going anywhere today." I smile
kissing him

"It's our car now" he laughs

"That's my car Baby, you have to get your own car" I chuckle

"With the peanuts I earn at Mr price" he frowns

"Are you still going back there?" I nod

"But that would mean some Sundays you will miss church, baby I don't mean to

sound like a bully but please leave that job, I am more than capable of taking care of you and I need you by my side on Sundays" he says holding both my hands

"Okay baby" he sighs relieved he probably thought I was going to put up a fight but I'm not.

"Is it okay if I got to school then, with the time I'm going to have during the week

can I at least register at a college?" He smiles

"Of course my love, have you thought of what you want to do?"

"Fashion designing, I had an online clothing business but I lost focus, I love clothing and this time I want to sell my

own clothes online" he plants a kiss on my forehead

"You can go ahead and look for a school, I will pay for it and get you a car" I squill

"A car?" He chuckles

"Yes a car, have you seen mamoruti using public transport" I giggle shaking my head.

"I get to choose?" He smiles

"Yes within a budget" I squill doing the happy dance

## \*AT ROCCOMAMAS\*

I'm meeting Bree and my brother Thabiso for lunch, I am so nervous. I know he never liked me. Even back then before the whole trafficking issue, he just didn't like me. He probably saw through the person I was back then.

"Oh my word moruti Modise did things to you, look at the glow" Bree says as I approach the table, Thabiso is already looking at me like he is bored.

"Hello" I shyly greet

"mm"

"Thabiso!" Bree says scolding him for his cold response

"It's okay" we order and eat in silence, the tension is so thick you can cut it with a knife.

"Thabiso I asked you to come here so that the three of us can sit and clear the air as siblings not as old enemies"Bree says and Thabiso chuckles

"So I'm supposed to forget about what papa and I went through when you were missing? I had to repeat an entire year because I couldn't cope. If it wasn't for Thapelo I would have dropped out after working so hard to get a bursary only to lose it due to stress. I'm sorry Bree but I can't do this" he tries to get up but I touch his hand and I get a vision

"I know I messed up and destroyed many lives with my actions but I am a different woman compared to who I was back then. I'm not saying that you should forgive just like that but I'm asking for a second chance and if I mess up then you can write me off." He keeps quiet. Bree gets up to go to the loo, you know how pregnant women pee frequently.

"She's not lying about the baby being yours. She's considering doing an

abortion because she thinks you will bail on her." He frowns

"Are you some type of sangoma or something" I smile

"Or something, please call her now
Before it's too late, she's about to do the
procedure." He gets up making a call, few
moments later Bree comes back

"Don't tell me he left" I shrug

"You were right she was at Lister building at a woman's clinic about to abort he says behind me before taking a seat again.

Bree is lost but I smile

"Congratulations we are about to be aunts"

\*MTHIMKHULU HOMESTEAD\*

\*NARRATED\*

Sithelo is sitting on the couch with all these people staring at her waiting for answers.

"Sithelo is it true that shongololo is here in this yard?" Her mother in law asks hoping that there a reasonable explanation.

"I'm sorry mama" she says looking down in shame and Mamthimkhulu shakes her head.

"Let's go to your house to get shongololo so that these people can leave" Sithelo nods getting up. They arrive at her house with everyone on her tail. She goes straight to her matrimonial bedroom and Mamthimkhulu scoffs

"You allowed another man to enter your matrimonial bedroom?" She looks down in shame.

"We don't have all day wena nondindwa open the door!" Mrs shongololo says shouting at the back, Sithelo is reluctant to open the door because Shongololo is naked. She turns the key and slowly opens the door crossing her fingers hoping that shongololo magically

disappeared but luck is not on her side because Shongololo's wife pushed herself inside only to be met by her naked husband on top of the bed.

Mamthimkhulu shakes her head very disappointed. The initiates carry shongololo out of the bedroom with the wife refusing for her husband to get dressed.

"I want people to see him as we drag his unfaithful ass back to his hut and if

anyone asks me I will sure tell them the truth."

"My daughter I know you are angry but bringing shame to your husband like that will make him lose the respect of all the people he helps" Mamthimkhulu says beginning

"So be it Mamthimkhulu. He is probably sleeping with them too" she says

instructing the initiates to carry her naked husband. While the nosy neighbours are busy taking videos.

"You have brought us shame Sithelo, if I were you I would pack my bags and leave this house because when Zolani finds out about this. You are as good as dead and I for one do not want to see my only son going to jail for trash like you"

Mamthimkhulu says leaving her standing

there. On her way to her house she passes Musa's house, she's been sitting on the balcony quietly sipping on lemonade watching everything unfold.

Later in the afternoon Sithelo's kids are back from preschool when they enter their home they are met by an awful smell.

"Eww mama what is that smell?" She looks down in shame because she knows she's the reason for the horrible smell. She bathed four times but the smell of a dead decomposing dog doesn't want to leave her.

## **CHAPTER 38**

\*\*\*\*\*\*BREE\*\*\*\*\*

Thabiso did loosen up after the vision my sister had of one of his fuck buddies fixing to get rid of his baby. I was also surprised but she told me not to make a big deal out of it because it was the very first time something like that happened to her. Thabiso did admit that Tumi looks, sounds and dresses differently from what she used to be. She used to love to slay and look better than everyone. If you invite her to your wedding she'd wear a white dress and a tiara that's how evil she was. People stopped inviting her to events

because she made sure that she took the lime light away from you, but now she is humble and meek. Very likable, anyway today I'm going home because tomorrow the Moletsane family is paying Lobola for me. I didn't give a damn about Kopano paying Lobola for me but he insists on it.

"Are you ready to go?" I sulk rubbing my tummy

"Do I have to go back there, can't I rock up tomorrow early in the morning before the negotiations start." He chuckles

"You were supposed to have left on
Tuesday already" it's a good thing we
hired catering for tomorrow. I don't trust
my aunts, they're more likely to steal the
food than actually cooking it."

"Okay! I'm ready let's go before I change my mind about marrying you" Kopano drives me back to the Modiri household, the last time I was here was When Phil kidnapped me. I still remember it like it was yesterday, I haven't set foot in this house since then but I'm glad I'm here because one bad memory doesn't erase all the great moments I had with my father in this house.

"I'll see you on the flip side Mrs me" I chuckle

"I love you" I say opening the door. He swiftly comes to my side and helps me out of the car. We share a brief kiss and a hug before I enter the yard. I see my granny Maleburu shaking her head.

"I can't believe you are marrying that rude thug that once pulled a gun on us. Modiri must be turning in his grave" I choose to ignore her and go straight to my room. Which I'll be sharing with Thando my cousin.

"Girl, how do you do it? Less than a month ago you buried your husband and now here you are marrying his brother.

You need to tell me your secret" Lord here comes another one.

\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*

The whole team is at my place well except for Stan. We are having a chilled get together. Sgora is also here which is good. He seems to be getting better each day,

cracking jokes here and there. Thapelo and I take turns checking up on him.

"So boss are you ready get married" Steve asks

"I'm more than ready. I can't wait to say I do to the woman I love. If it were up to be I'd marry her tomorrow right after the Lobola negotiations but you know women and their dream weddings"

"Didn't she have that with your late brother??" Lisa asks

"She can have a wedding on the moon if she wants to. She's worth it" Thapelo chuckles, I told him about Lisa's stunt at Lusaka months ago. He wanted me to fire her but she promised to behave.

We chill until late and one by one everyone starts leaving until I'm left by myself. As I'm about to lock, someone knocks and I open for them. It's Lisa I just frown

"Sorry boss I forgot my apartment keys. I looked everywhere, can I come in?" I nod making way.

She looks around until she spots them on top of the couch she was sitting on.

"Found them" I nod

"I'm very happy for you boss, you deserve all the happiness in the world" she says pouring a glass of whiskey

"Aren't you driving?" She chuckles handing me the glass.

"I'm not drunk" I take the glass and gulp it up. All of a sudden I feel light headed

"You drugged me Lisa" she smiles

"I'm going to ride that dick all night long, I'm ovulating by the way" I try to get up but I trip and fall, I fucken should have known.

\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*

I have always loved Kopano since from the very moment I laid my eyes on him in Cape town. I was a con artist back then, I tried to con him but he saw right through me, instead of getting me arrested he recruited me and teamed me up with Thapelo. Together we brought down many companies in many countries making him the richest man in the world but he down plays his wealth. I should be

the one leading this empire with him not little miss perfect.

He is out of it now, I try to drag him to the bedroom but this man is huge. I guess we'll be sleeping on the carpet in the living room. I take off all his clothes and mine. I take a couple of pictures with me laying on his chest.. I grab his dick and I try getting it up by giving him a blow job but the bloody thing won't get up. I get on top of him trying and rub my pussy

with his dick and sure enough it stiffnes now we are talking. I start to ride him with my hands on my breast moaning load until I feel huge hands grab me from behind. The horror on my face when I see Sgora and Thapelo looking deadly.

"You fucken bitch, you are busy raping my brother. You are done Lisa you hear me? It's over for you. Shadow is going to destroy you, it's a good thing you know how he operates" Thapelo says throwing

me on the couch, I'm scared witless but I won't show it

"Kopano is mine!" Sgora slaps me so hard that I see stars. Kopano starts groaning waking up while they are distracted looking at Kopano I use that as an opportunity to make a run for it. I run out naked Luckily my car is parked outside the yard. I exhale once I'm driving off.

\*\*\*\*\*\*THAPELO\*\*\*\*\*

I just got to my place when I received a call from Tumi telling me that she got my numbers from Bree and that I should rush to Kopano's place as soon as possible. I wanted to ask a lot of questions but something told me to do as told. I called

Sgora and asked him to meet me there only to find Lisa raping my brother, I'm so disgusted.

"She got away" Sgora says rushing back inside

"It's fine, we will find her" Kopano opens his eyes "Where's that bitch?" That's the first thing he says

"She got away" he sits up holding his head

"She drugged me" I sigh

"We found her having her way with you" he looks at his penis then clenches his jaws. Sgora hands him his clothes.

"She said she's ovulating and....." He sighs

"I'm sorry bro, we got here as fast as we could" he looks broken.

"Get Steve on the phone, I want her found. I'm going to kill her myself" he says getting up.

Just as I'm about to call Steve, Miles comes barging in looking like he's seen a ghost.

"What's wrong?" Check your phones.

Your identities including mine has been leaking. There are pictures of Kopano and

Lisa naked in each other's arms with the caption

"While others are begging for a meeting with thee shadow I get to sleep on his chest" the president is livid "

"I'm getting calls from the FBI, CIA, DEA and the Interpol. Shadow I swear every terrorist out there is gunning for you"

Steve says walking in.

"Work on removing our identities and pictures of Lisa and I, find her, I want her alive. Thapelo I want you to issue out a statement. Sunday I want a press conference held at the Sandton conversation centre. Tomorrow I'm paying Lobola for my wife. In the meantime I'll be talking to the world presidents." He says buttoning his shirt. Now this is the Shadow I know, he is not panicking.

\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*

I change the flowers in the vase and plant a kiss on her forehead. She looks at me and frowns "Did my husband send you?" I nod and she smiles

"The doctor said he's away on a church conference. I miss him, I still haven't told him about the baby." She says rubbing her tummy.

"How's the baby" she smiles

"Well behaved, I don't get morning sickness which is great. When do you think I can leave this place? I miss Bree and Shelly" I sigh

"The doctor needs to make sure that the baby is fine before you can go back home" she nods

"Do you know me?" She shrugs

"Aren't you Tokelo's church leader or a deacon or something?" She says shrugging.

"I'm your friend too" she smiles

"Thanks you" I nod. The doctor pops her head in and signals me to follow her outside.

"How is she doing doctor?" She sighs

"Nosipho is suffering from dissociative disorders"

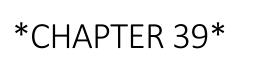
"What is that? Is it the reason she doesn't know me?"

"Dissociative disorders usually develop as a reaction to trauma and help keep difficult memories at bay. Symptoms ranging from amnesia to alternate identities, depend in part on the type of dissociative disorder you have. Times of stress can temporarily worsen symptoms, making them more obvious.

Treatment for dissociative disorders may include talk therapy and medication.

Although treating dissociative disorders can be difficult, many people learn new ways of coping and lead healthy, productive lives." I sigh

"She will be just fine just keep on supporting her." I nod, This is all my fault.



The Moletsane family has arrived. I have been in my room praying and hoping that my family doesn't embarrass me. Thando has been a nuisance going on and on about how I should hook her up with Thapelo since he's single. We are in my

bedroom waiting to be called by the elders

"Oh my gosh I knew it" I roll my eyes.

She's been on the phone the entire time.

"Your so called man is not perfect after all, yinja (he's a dog)just like the rest of them" I frown

"What are you on about?" She looks so happy you'd swear she won the lottery. She hands me her phone with a smug look on her face. I look at the phone and I see a fading picture then a message saying "an error has occurred"

"I don't see anything maan Thando" she giggles

"Denial is not only a river in Egypt honey"
I shake my head giving her the phone
back. She looks at the screen and her
eyes pop

"I swear there was a naked picture of
Kopano with some woman laying on top
of his chest" she keeps on pressing on her
phone

"Oh my gosh I swear on my children's lives" she looks so spooked I can't help but laugh.

"Your man must have found a way to remove it but some woman with red hair was sleeping on his tattooed bare chest" the woman with red hair, that catches my attention. I downplayed my reaction but I know that Lisa has ruby red hair.

The Moletsane paid in full the ridiculous amount my family wanted. Apparently they also charged him for pulling a gun on them. I'm so happy this is over and done with, now I can go home. Kgatli is outside with his uncles. He has taken a liking to uncle Sgora.

I greet the guys who are busy eating and go straight to my man.

"Mamoletsane" I blush

"How's my baby"

"Which one?" He smiles but it doesn't reach his eyes

"Are you okay?" He sighs

"There's something I need to tell you" my heart skips a beat

"Don't tell me you slept with Lisa" he looks down and I start hyperventilating

"Baby breathe, it's not what you think" oh my gosh that's a cheater's classic go to line, it's not what it looks like, it's not what you think.

I feel like I'm dying, I can't breathe

"Not you Kopano please" I say in a whisper right before passing out.

\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*

She collapsed in my arms, the hurt in her eyes just broke my heart. When I get my hands on Lisa I swear she's going to pay. With everything that's going on now I have to worry about Bree and my child's health. I carry her to the car and drive to the hospital with my brothers on my tail.

We get to the hospital and they attended to her as quickly as possible. As soon as

I'm done filling out the forms Thapelo, Sgora and Steve enter

"There are a lot of journalists outside asking questions about Mr and Mrs Shadow" I sigh this is the last thing I need.

"Thapelo I need you to organise security for Mrs Shadow" he laughs

"I also need you to book this entire floor, nobody goes in or out without clearance" he nods and makes a call walking away

"I have good news for you" miles says walking in.

"Shoot!" I say smiling

"I found Lisa and I put her in solitary confinement in SunCity." I smirk, finally some good news.

The doctors had to perform a c section to remove the baby because Bree's blood pressure was alarmingly high. Thank god the baby is fine, I am officially a father to a baby boy born weighing 2.9 kg. He came three weeks earlier but I'm a happy father. I walk into her ward, she's holding the baby in her arms smiling but as soon

as her eyes lands on me her beautiful smile turns into a frown

"Get out!" She says almost shouting

"Let me explain and if you want me to leave after that then I will leave I promise. We just had our baby we should be happy not fighting" she scoffs

"Who's fault is that?" I sigh and tell her the entire story. She listens attentively until she starts crying, I take the baby from her and place her in the baby crib.

"I'm sorry I thought....."

"Shhhh it's okay baby, our lives are about to change. I need to know if you are with

me through it all. I will never hurt you not intentionally." She sobs

"I told you that I don't like that flamingo legs" I laugh

"That you did" I say pecking her lips.

"I like the name Kabelo our beautiful portion" she says looking over at our son

"I love it," I say kissing her forehead

"Are you okay? Emotionally I mean what Lisa did to you was....." I don't let her finish the sentence

"I'm fine, I can't afford not to be. Many people are relying on me. I've been through worse" I sigh "As long as I got you in my life, I have everything" i walk over to our son and pick him up. He is my photocopy but he has Bree's eyes. Tumi walks in carrying a gift bag. She greets me and hugs Bree.

"I don't know how you knew something bad was about to happen but thank you" I say and she nods

"I think my sister is some kind of sangoma or something I don't know. It's not the first time she had a vision that was spot on." Tumi smiles

"It's just a gift that's all and sis I'm going to need Stanley Mthimkhulu's numbers. His silent cries are disturbing me at night." Wow I'm speechless.

## \*MTHIMKHULU HOMESTEAD\*

\*NARRATED\*

Sithelo's kids had to move to the main house because they couldn't stand the smell, but that's not all, she seems to have developed a skin disorder, every morning she needs to wash the blankets she used at night because her skin sheds. It's not painful but it's uncomfortable. She spends all her time alone in her bedroom regretting everything she has done. Nobody in the family wants anything to do with her except for Musa who brings her food everyday. Although she has always been nasty towards her Musa is

the only one showing her kindness. Musa opens the bedroom door holding a tray of food, wearing a face mask.

"How are you feeling Sisi?"

"Why are you this nice to me?"

"Because it doesn't cost me anything to be nice to you"

"I deserve everything that's happening to me don't I?" she shrugs

"I'm not God I can't judge you but I believe in order to make things right you need to come clean to our husband and ask for forgiveness. Maybe a ceremony to appease the ancestors might heal you" if

only it was that simple Sithelo thought to herself

"Why don't you hate her? I've been hearing her name since day one of my marriage, you seem to like her and get along with her" Musa takes a seat

"I love Zolani, from the very moment I laid my eyes on him. He didn't lie to me or sell me fake dreams, he told me about loving

a certain woman but forced to marry another. He was in pain after he found out that the woman he truly loves being married to someone else. To comfort him I gave him my innocence, he didn't ask for it nor did he force me but I just wanted to make him feel better. Few months later I found out I was pregnant and Zolani being the noble man that he is he married me. He respects me, provides for me, loves our kids and even when he found his way back to Nosipho's arms he never hid it from me. I understand my

role in his life and I know that I have a place in his heart too. When he makes love to me. He doesn't make me feel like I'm second or third best. He makes me feel like I'm the only one in his life. He calls me everyday without fail, now tell me. Why would I hate Nosipho when she's the reason for my happiness. When Mthimkhulu is happy then I'm happy" Sithelo is shocked by Musa's response. How can one be okay with another woman being with her man. Never! She thinks to herself

"You are a better person than me" she laughs

"Do you love our husband?" Musa asks

"Yes I love him" she chuckles

"You need to do some introspection before answering that question. When you love someone, you want them to be happy even if it's not with you. Their happiness and wellbeing is your number one goal and it comes naturally, you don't sleep with another man and justify it by saying yeah but he's doing the same. Your love shouldn't be based on conditions." Sithelo nods and smiles. Musa leaves Sithelo's house and as soon as she enters the main house all the children and her mother in law complain of the bad odour

she brought along. Some of the children start to vomit. Musa decides to go take a shower and dispose of the clothes she was wearing.

## \*CHAPTER 40\*

\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*

I knew from the moment Sgora and Thapelo caught me on top of Shadow that my life is over. I wanted to take them down but who am I kidding. Shadow is untouchable, the only thing I was able to do by exposing his identity was make him more famous than he already is. That bitch should have stayed in Mexico, to think that I was part of the team that tracked her down makes me sick to my stomach. If only I knew that Shadow was in love with her I would have done everything in my power to make sure she

remained in Mexico selling her useless body. It's no use crying over spilled milk, I might as well kill myself because I know how ruthless Shadow is. He won't kill me but he will make me wish I was dead. He might peel off my face like he did with that soldier guy. I pulled out a razor blade I was hiding inside the shoe sole. I start cutting my wrists and watch as I bleed out. Yes I'm dying but I'm dying on my own terms. I close my eyes, relaxing my body and I welcome death.

\*MTHIMKHULU HOMESTEAD\*

\*NARRATED\*

Sithelo lays awake as her skin keeps on shedding, big boils on her thighs are getting bigger and bigger, she's in a lot of pain and she's unable to move around. She prays for death to come visit her and whisk her away from the suffering she's experiencing right at this minute. She wants to confess her transgressions to her husband but she doesn't know how.

She sends her husband a text message telling him that she's not well and would like to see him. A moment later her husband replies promising to she her in a couple of days time. She sighs wondering if she will ever recover again.

"How are you feeling sis" Sithelo sighs as she watches Musa putting down the tray of food.

"I need to see my husband and Nosipho so that I can apologize"

"Nosipho is not well, she's in hospital"
Sithelo nods

"Zolani said he will be here in a couple of days time. Musa I know I have no right to ask you this but if anything happens to me, please watch over my kids for me. Raise them as your own please my sister"
Sithelo says breaking down

"I give you my word" Musa turned and walked out the room with tears streaming down her face. Although Sithelo was never nice to her, she held her in very high regard and the fact that she's hurting and there's nothing she can do about it hurts her to the core. She changes the clothes she wore and hops in the shower before going back into the main house.

"Ma! Zolani is coming soon, Sithelo asked him to come. Mama I swear whoever did this Sithelo is cruel, she's dying slowly"

Mamthimkhulu side eyes her

"Sithelo has nobody but herself to blame.

I don't feel sorry for her and I will always
hate her for what she did to my son. I
can't even go to church without everyone

gossiping about me and pointing their fingers at me" Musa decides to keep quiet because she can tell that her mother in law is angry and she doesn't want to make things worse.

\*\*\*\*\*\*BOITUMELO\*\*\*\*\*

Today I dragged my husband to Pretoria with me to visit Nosipho. He was very reluctant but he ended up coming with me because he can never say no to me. I really don't understand how my gift works but I have been having dreams about this couple especially Stanley. I called him prior to coming here so he is expecting us.

"Hey Stan, we spoke on the phone I'm Nosi's friend. I'm not sure if you remember me from a while back" he smiles politely

"I remember you Tumi and it's very nice to see you again" there's awkward silence

"This is my husband Tokelo and Nosi's ex husband" I didn't know how else to

introduce them but that is the best I could come up with.

"Can we see her please?" He nods leading the way. You can tell from the way he is walking that he doesn't sleep properly nor does he eat well. We get into the ward and Nosi jumps out of bed attacking Tokelo with a hug, if Bree didn't tell me about her mental state I swear I would have gone all jet lee on her mamuruti or not

"My husband, baby you came" Tokelo gently hugs her back then breaks the hug

"You! What are you doing here? You want to traffic me too like you Did Bree" she says as soon as her eyes land on me.

"Hello Nosi, we came to pray with you. Do you mind if I sit next to you" she frowns and looks at Tokelo who nods, only then she allows me to sit next to her. I take both her hands and I start praying. After a short but powerful prayer I opened my eyes and smiled at Nosi

"How do you feel now" she smiles

"I feel good" I nod

"Every time you feel overwhelmed with emotions and anxiety go down on your knees and pray. The peace and serenity you are feeling now comes from the holy spirit assuring you that everything will be alright" she nods wiping her tears

"Nosi do you remember that you are divorced with Tokelo" she buries her face into her hands

"Nosi Sisi, it's okay. We just want to help you" she nods

"I am divorced" she says with glossy eyes

"Do you know this man?" I say pointing at Stan" she nods

"Okay sweetie, we are going to give you some time alone so that you can talk, remember when it all gets too much just talk to God, he is known to carry all the heavy burdens for us." She nods

"Stan, can I have a word with you privately before we leave?" He nods and I leave Tokelo and Nosi to talk I think Nosi needs closure more than anything that's why her mind keeps trailing back to Tokelo, she needs to forgive herself and move on.

"You look tired" we are now sitting on the bench outside Nosi's room

"I am and I still need to go home for a couple of days. My wife is sick" I nod

"I have a gift I still don't understand how it works but sometimes I am shown things that are hidden" he frowns then looks at me confused

"I don't know how to tell you this but your first wife is the reason that you hated Nosi and you wanted to kill her and only one of the three children you have with your first wife is biologically yours" his face changes from confusion to anger

"Sisi I don't know what you are talking about. Those are my kids. We performed welcoming ceremonies for them. The Mthimkhulu ancestors wouldn't have

welcomed them if they were not Mthimkhulu by blood" I sigh

"Unless the person performing those rituals is the father" now he looks disgusted

"Look I'm only telling you this because by the time you reach home it will be too late for your wife's confession. I'm afraid the man you went to is very powerful and he sent your wife and the seer a very powerful spell. By sunrise tomorrow your wife will be dead" I'm surprising even myself with all this information. God I hope I'm not making things worse by revealing all this.

\*\*\*\*\*\*BREE\*\*\*\*\*

When Kopano said that our lives were about to change I honestly didn't imagine what is happening right now. My husband booked the entire hospital floor, the minister of health and the hospital's CEO came to check if I'm being well taken care of. The nurses fuss over me and don't get me started on the social media, my pictures are everywhere even when I was

turning tricks in Mexico, my whole life is splashed everywhere. Some women went as far as saying I'm too much of a plain Jane to be married to the hunk Mr Shadow, some say I should hire a stylist and a personal trainer. The last nail to the coffin was when one journalist dressed as a nurse and came into my room while I was breastfeeding and took pictures of me and Kabelo. I swear I even fear going to the loo without my son in my arms. Kopano is so chilled about this whole situation while I on the other hand am

freaking out. They call us the richest and most influential couple in the world, not in mzansi, not in Africa but the whole world yoh!

"I'm sorry" Kopano says walking in, he looks exhausted, he walks over to the crib and watches our son in admiration as he sleeps

"It's okay" no it's not

"I'll fix this" I get up from the bed and hug him from behind and lay my head on his back

"I love you Moletsane" he turns around and smashes his lips on mine

"I love you too Mamoletsane" I smile

"Did you get Lisa" he clicks his tongue

"That bitch killed herself before I can even get to her, she deprived me of my revenge." I look down

"Weren't you going to kill her kanti?" He shakes his head

"Lisa knows how I operate hence she took the easy way out. I wasn't going to kill her physically I was going to kill her soul" wow!

"Let's leave South Africa, just the four of us, we can go to a quiet place in a village or an island somewhere" I smile

"Let's" he kisses my forehead.

"I'll plan everything, as soon as you are discharged we are leaving south Africa"

## \*CHAPTER 41\*

I'm so angry I feel like I'm about to have a fit. After Tumi and the pastor left, I had a heart to heart talk with Nosi. She said I must give her time to heal and accept everything that's been going on in our lives. I will give her the space she requires

but I'm not leaving her. I love her so much that I don't see myself without her. I can't believe Sithelo is capable of doing all that Tumi said she did. Even if I doubt her, the sangoma we went to in Soweto did tell me that the person or people who did this are going to confess right before dying. It's 4 am and I'm already on my way to KZN I just hope I make it in time.

As soon as I drive into the yard I am met by Musa crying her eyes out which could

only mean one thing, I'm too late! As soon as I park my car all my kids come running to me smiling and my thoughts trail back to what Tumi said and I can't help but get emotional, I love all my kids. All the hustling I do is for them to have a better life than I did, a life full of choices. I had to marry Sithelo because her father once saved my father's life, my father couldn't pay him the money he demanded after healing him so they made me their bargaining chip. I want my children to marry who they want when

they want to. I don't want money to be a problem to them but here I am today, looking at all of them wondering which one is mine and which one is not mine.

"Musa Mkami why are you crying?" She sniffs throwing herself in my arms but I'm hit by a disgusting odour and I push her back gently

"Forgive me Zolani, I will go bath and change. Mama is inside she will explain everything" she says already running off. As soon as I enter the house my mother hugs me

"Oh my son! I could never apologize enough for forcing you to get married to Sithelo, when your father had enough money and tried to pay off her father, he refused and said we will regret it if we want back on our deal. Now your father is

no more and you are suffering" she says crying

"Why are you bringing up all these things now, it's been 6 years and I'm fine really, I understand why dad did that. Why was Musa crying, is everything okay?" She sighs

"Sithelo passed away, we don't know exactly when she died but Musa went up

I nod. As much as our marriage was arranged, I have come to love and care for Sithelo. Her betrayal really cuts deep.

"I've called the undertaker and instructed them to have gasmasks on because Sithelo was rotting alive. The only person who could stand the smell was Musa, God bless her heart because marrying that girl was the best choice" she's right about that, Musa is one of a kind. She's more of a friend to me than a wife, she

listens without judgment and always knows what to say to make me feel better, she is a remarkable woman.

After the undertaker left with Sithelo, we had a family meeting. I asked the helper to look after the kids in the meantime.

"What happened, why wasn't I told that Sithelo is sick? Clearly she didn't start getting sick yesterday when she called me" Musa looks down

"Ma!" She sighs and tells me everything about how shongololo was caught naked in my bed and being spiritually asleep.

"I was paying shongololo 15k a month to sleep with my wife" I say shaking my head. Just as we are talking a knock comes through the door and in walks a woman and two men.

"Sanibonani" we greet back and offer them seats.

"We are the bhengu family. Our brother was found in this premises spiritually sleeping and in the early hours of this morning he drew his last breath. We are here to let you know that the daughter in law of this family has disgraced us and the bhengu ancestors wants you to cleanse

our homestead with a cow and a case of scotch whisky. Before our brother died he confessed to his wife that he fathered two children in this premises. Since him and his wife never had any kids we would like to have our kids and have them use their rightful surname" I chuckle

"Are you done or do you have any more demands?" I ask

"That will be all Mthimkhulu, bare in mind that we are not here to fight, we just

want what is ours and for you to cleanse our home or there'll be huge consequences" I burst out laughing, these people are shitting on me.

"Your brother got paid every month whether we used his services that month or not but he saw it fit to bite the hand that feeds me. He slept with my wife in my bed and I should cleanse your yard? Hei maan fuck all of you and your damn ancestors. There's no child you are getting

here. Your dirty husband introduced those kids to the Mthimkhulu ancestors and my name is on their birth certificates. No child of mine will be herding cows when they are used to a soft life. Now take your broke asses out of my yard before I shoot all of you" I say taking out my gun and placing it on the table.

"The king will here about this" they says getting up

"Fotsek!" I look over at my mother.

"I want her buried as quickly as possible.

Nosi needs me, she's in hospital because
of shongololo and his lover they made me
hate Nosi and beat her up" she shakes
her head

"We can even bury her tomorrow, I want to forget she ever existed and thank you for not agreeing to that nonsense of them taking my grandchildren. I bet they don't even have money to bury shongololo

that's why they are demanding cows." I laugh at how pissed off my mother is.

\*\*\*\*\*\*\*BREE\*\*\*\*\*

The doctor discharged us and I'm so happy that Kabelo and I are going home.

"Mrs Moletsane thank you for staying with us you are truly humble." Yoh was I in a hotel? I smile awkwardly. Right then Thapelo and Thabiso walk in

"Where's Kopano?"they burst out laughing

"Dude you owe me a 1000 bucks"

Thabiso says holding out his hand to

Thapelo

"Guys are you seriously going to ignore me" they laugh

"He's busy with some stuff so he send us to come pick you up"

"Where's Kgatli?" Gosh I miss my son so much

"He's with Thando" I frown

"Sgora" he clarifies seeing my confusion. I thought he's with my cousin Thando.

Going out of the hospital was a mission, we were escorted by the police and the traffic officers. Journalists have been camping at the hospital since I got

admitted. Thank god I never chose a career in journalism. We get to my house and it's packed.

"Wow you guys what are you doing here?" I ask Tumi and her husband, Miles and his wife, Steve and his wife, Sgora is here as well.

"We came to bid farewell to the shadow family" miles says.

Kopano comes walk in with a huge smile on his face. I still can't get used seeing him smiling this much. Tumi takes the baby from me and I walk over to my husband giving him a bone crushing hug.

"Our farewell huh?" He chuckles

"We are leaving this afternoon" my eyes pop

"How did you get visas so quickly"

"Where Kopano fails shadow succeeds."

There's nothing I can't do to see that beautiful smile on your face" I'm a blushing mess right now.

Kgatli is always on sgora's tail it's so funny to watch but he came to hug me and kissed his brother right before rush off to uncle Sgora.

"I love you Bree and I know that I love you because I pray for you more than I pray for my husband and myself. When I make an example of forgiveness and grace, I never seize to mention your name. I wish you and your family a great journey ahead. You deserve to relax and have all the fun in the world. You have been through a lot now it's time to enjoy life. Please publish that book you've been working on, I know you put it on hold because you don't want to offend me but I swear our story is not one of tragedy but it's a story of overcoming what was meant to break the both of us. I love you my one and only sister" I'm in tears right now. Her gift is on another level, how did she know about the book I wrote? I decided not to publish it because when I wrote it I was still angry at her so you can imagine how I painted her.

"To Mr and Mrs Shadow" everyone lifted their glasses. Greece here we come

\*CHAPTER 42\*

\*Five years later\*

It has been five years and we have been so happy with my husband. We have a two month old baby girl we named her Thoriso. I wanted to name her Greece but my husband was having none of it. I feel like the president's wife, even in Greece

and the other countries we visited they treated us like royalty or famous people. I swear I'm living the life. If you had told me 10 years ago when I was turning tricks in the streets of st Maria I swear I would have laughed in your face. We came back to South Africa a month ago and I must say. I'm happy to be home.

"Coffee?" We are in the lounge, the kids are upstairs sleeping. It's just the two of us enjoying some queit time.

"Sure" I get up and make him coffee while I make hot chocolate for myself

"You know I miss Athens yoh, the beautiful beaches, the food, the culture" he laughs

"I almost lost you to their museums, remember how you'd beg me to watch

Kabelo so that you can go to the museum" I laugh covering my eyes with my hand.

"Thank you" I say smiling

"For what Mrs Moletsane?"

"For quietly loving me, for going out of your way to rescue me. I know I never thanked you. Oh and for having the

branding of the Santos brothers removed. "he plants a kiss on my lips.

"I can think of a way you can thank me" he says licking his lips, we haven't had sex since the birth of Thoriso. Two whole months, my baby is dying shame.

"Be gentle Moletsane" he nods and kisses me softly and beautifully. He makes sure he pleasures me first by taking me to muff town. I swear my husband has the longest tongue ever. He's very gentle until the hoe in me screams:

"Faster baby" he hesitates a bit

"Please daddy" he goes in fast and hard, he gets me screaming his name as I cum and he follows soon after.

"Mommy" Kopano jumps of me covering me with a throw.

"Hey baby, why are you up?" It's Kabelo rubbing his eyes.

"I had a bad dream"

"Sorry baby, go back to your room mommy is coming to tuck you in okay?"

He nods and climbs the stairs

"Do you think he saw us?"

"He might have not seen us but he definitely heard us" sigh!

\*\*\*\*\*\*NOSIPHO\*\*\*\*\*

"Nkazimulo please help your brother put on his shoes we are running late" these kids are driving me crazy.

"Mamabo kanti what's taking this long" I scoff

"Ask your children" we are going to KZN to it's Mamthimkhulu's 65th birthday party. I gave birth to twins boys Mvelo and Muzi after we got married I took two

of Sithelo's children which are now my children, Nkazimulo and Mabongi. Musa and I are doing this whole polygamy thing so well, I swear she's now my best friend after Bree and Tumi of course.

It wasn't easy getting to where we are right now but it was worth it and with the help of Tumi I was able to heal and move on. Stan and I have been married for four years and it has been a total bliss. I love

being a stay at home mom and taking care of my family gives my great joy.

"If you and your kids are not done in the next five minutes I am leaving you behind" he says walking out, patience has never been his strong point.

We get to the Mthimkhulu homestead and it's already buzzing with relatives and neighbours. Musa comes rushing to hug

the kids the hugs me. She pulls me aside looking nervous.

"How are you his heart" she calls me that ever since our wedding day when Stan said I'm his heart during his vows.

"I'm good Musa" she sighs

"I don't know how to tell you this, I haven't told our husband yet but I wanted

you to be the first one to know and to apologize if I crossed the line" I frown

"I'm pregnant" I sigh

"Girl! All that speech because you opened your legs wide and allowed your husband, the father of your children to nut in you and you are here causing drama"

"So you are not angry?" I laugh at her

"Why would I be angry mara Musa?
When I agreed to get married to Stan I
knew that has another wife.

Congratulations and stop worrying about me." She looks down

"It's just that Sithelo always got angry when I was pregnant. Zolani was always yours it's just that yours and his destiny was stolen by circumstances but I respect

you so much" isn't she sweet, she makes it so hard to hate her

"I promise you I'm not angry and this whole week our husband will be staying with you so that you can give that baby Mthimkhulu features" her face lights up and she hugs me.

"Thank you" she's so nice, it's almost sad.

The party ended just after midnight and I'm exhausted, I just took a shower, the kids are sleeping in the main house and I'm sleeping in my very own house that my husband built for me. I get into bed when the bedroom door opens and I frown

"Aren't you sleeping at Musa's tonight"

<sup>&</sup>quot;What gave you that idea?"

"But it's only fair" he chuckles

"Then you shouldn't have dànced like that turning me on"

"Kodwa bhungane.....(but)"

"You know what you do to me when you call me by my clan names angithi?" He says licking his lips and already stripping off his clothes

"I promised Musa that you will be sleeping with her" he ignores me and climbs on the bed and starts kissing me, I had some wine earlier and it went straight down to my punani.

"Next time, never make promises you can't keep" he says nibbling on my ear.

Let's just say I'm being thoroughly fucked I'm sorry Musa. Tomorrow I'll fake period pains

\*\*\*\*\*\*BOITUMELO\*\*\*\*\*

"Everything that you are going through is not a surprise to God, he is more than capable of turning your life around for his glory."

"Thank you my prophetess, you know since you prayed for my husband. He has stopped drinking and abusing us.

Yesterday I found him reading the Bible, I really don't know how you did it" we are at the woman's conference in Cape town. I was invited to minister for the entire weekend.

"All the glory goes to he who is in me." I say hugging the woman. My life has changed so much in the past five years. I

gave birth to Tokelo jr four years ago and I'm 6 months pregnant with twin girls. Life has been amazing and my husband has been my biggest cheerleader. I decided to study theological studies and I was ordained minister two years ago and now I'm known as prophetess Modise. I travel all over Africa ministering the good news of the lord.

Nosi and I are friends again. Although my time is always occupied with the traveling

I do but I do make time for my family and friends. Thabiso and I have grown close to one another, he is now a medical doctor at flora clinic in Florida and he is now married expecting his second baby.

"She wrote the book "I am not my past" where she speaks about her journey to salvation. We are honoured to have this incredible woman in our midst. She's a wife, a mother, an author and a prophet but she took her time out of her busy

schedule to honour our invitation. Ladies please help me welcome prophetess
Tumi Modise" I get up as they clap like crazy.

"Thank you for that great introduction, no matter how many times I hear what I have achieved it still feels surreal. Ladies your current situation is not your final destination. God is not done with yes, yes! Let them talk, let them conclude, let them write you off. Hai she will never get

married with three children and different fathers. Hai she will never get a job kunini ahleli ekhaya(how long has she been unemployed) let them talk but never remove your eyes from god because when he finally does it for you. He shows off, he will do more that you imagined. Look at me, my own family thought it was over for me but God prepared a feast and guess who are the guests of honour? Everyone who said its over"

\*CHAPTER 43\*

\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*

When my brother left the country with his family, Sgora and I got so close that we literally became brothers. So every year on Tshepo's birthday for the past four years we have been coming to his grave to wish him a happy birthday and to talk to him about our lives. Today is that time of the year. We buried our brother at West park cemetery.

After we both had our one on one with Tshepo we drove back home, we are traveling on the n1 freeway it's just after 10.pm and I spot a woman standing on the side of the road with a car next to her and an open bonnet under a bridge

"I think we should help her" I say slowing down. The woman looks attractive in her 6inch heels and small waist, even from the distance her body is visibly banging.

"I've been a criminal long enough to know a trap when I see one. She's the bait" I look at him astonished

"You reckon?" He nods

"I miss some action, let's stop and help, if she's a damsel in distress you owe me 1k but if she's not...." I don't get to finish "Get ready to pay me" I chuckle. We stop the car behind hers and I get out of the car leaving Sgora inside. The first thing I notice is her beauty, even in the dark she looks beautiful.

"What seems to be the problem mam?" I ask walking towards the open bonnet.

"I don't know" she says then she walks closer to me and whispers

"Get in your car and drive off it's a trap" I smirk

"I guess my brother was right, I have to pay him 1000 bucks" she looks at me confused

"Fotsek nja(dog) car keys, wallets and cell phones now" four guys appear out of nowhere carrying guns. I look over at the lady and she has an apologetic look on her face.

"Hosh!" One of the guys looked over at Sgora inside the car, they thought I was by myself, I used that opportunity to take out my gun. Sgora comes out of the car and out of nowhere two guys bow leaving the two other guys confused.

"Number one Sgora, hit man of the south salute king the don Sgora sa khona" I'm so tempted to laugh, they are even doing

a signature move. I swear this is the funniest shit I've ever seen.

"Drop your guns bafwethu(brothers) this is a no go area unless you want your family to sing amagugu while you are Satan's bitch in hell" I burst out laughing

"Sgora" he shrugs

I look over at mapakisha next to the car looking lost, she tried to warn us shame, Sgora catches on fast

"We are taking her, that's why we stopped the our car nithini bafwethu ( what do you say brothers)"

"Salute" I chuckle

"Get in the car" she doesn't need to be told twice. I'm going to have the best night of my life, I can feel it.

\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*\*

I'm a happy man, I am married to the love of my life and to my best friend. What more can a man ask for? It took a lot of begging and convincing and courting for me to finally get Nosipho to accept to be my second wife. After I explained to her how I got to have two wives and why I kept it from her, she was a little understanding. Now Musa and Nosi are best of friends I couldn't be happier.

"Mkami" tonight I'm sleeping at Musa's house yes I was planning to sleep here tonight although Nosi tried to be sneaky and faked period pains. I saw right through her and seduced her by muffing he. After she creamed my face with her juices, she couldn't look at me in the eyes. I told her that if she ever lies to me about period pains again, I am going to deny her an orgasm and I know how that scares her because I once did it. She got down on her knees and gave me one hell of a blowjob just to apologize.

"Zolani" Musa says with an attitude

"Why the attitude?"

"Nothing" I chuckle. I long noticed that she's pregnant and I think this pregnancy is driving her insane.

"If you say so how have you been?" She shrugs

"I'll fuck that attitude out of you if you keep answering me like uyehla eshlahleni(you are climbing down the tree)"

"Why didn't you come to my bedroom last night?" I cock my eyebrows

"Did I say I was going to come? What gave you that idea?" She plays with her fingers looking down

"Well it's only fair that you spend the nights with me since I don't live with you in Joburg" I chuckle

"Fair to who? This is not mathematics what you do on the left hand side you do on the right hand side, are we that petty now? I didn't come to you last night because I was drinking whiskey and I wanted rough sex, you are pregnant I wouldn't want to hurt my baby" her eyes pop

"She told you?" I shake my head

"I know you Musa, we've be been together for almost 10 years. I was there when you were pregnant the first two times. Now are we going to argue about this or are you going to allow me to bury myself inside you?" She looks flushed, I don't give her time to answer. My lips are on hers and she welcomes me with a moan.

\*\*\*\*\*\*\*KOPANO\*\*\*\*\*\*

I watch her as she prepares her speech for tomorrow. She's been nominated to win a humanitarian award for her fight against human trafficking. I am so proud of the work she's achieved working with the Interpol and raising awesomeness, she has published two best selling books,

Trafficked: A stolen destiny and the sequel I'm not for sale. The award ceremony will be held in Pretoria but I won't be able to attend because I have to go overseas for a couple of weeks. I don't know how to break the news to her.

<sup>&</sup>quot;How was that?" She asks

"I love it, straight to the point and very informative." She beams and I clear my throat, here goes nothing

"My love I won't be there tomorrow. I need to leave the country. I'm off too Washington DC tonight" the look she's giving

"You are kidding me right?" I shake my head

"I need to meet Joe biden regarding the war between Russia and Ukraine." She chuckles

"Where do you enter kanti wena? Are you going to stop the war?"

"I know the people who are supplying Russia with weapons. Baby this is what I do. I meet with presidents and do things that other people wouldn't do under the shadows"

"Well Mr under the shadows. You have a wife and three children, can't you send Thapelo or miles or Steve. I need you" I shake my head

"I have a bad feeling about this. Don't go?" I sigh

"I just told you about my trip a few seconds ago and jiki jiki you have a bad feeling. You knew who I was before we got married. Don't be that girl" she looks down

"It's only for a couple of weeks okay?" I say lifting her chin and pecking her lips

"Okay" I hug her and she hugs me back tightly

"I love you and I'll be watching your speech live" she nods. She doesn't look happy at all and she can't even pretend

\*CHAPTER 44\*

\*\*\*\*\*\*THAPELO\*\*\*\*\*

I fucken had one hell of a night with the lovely Makgotso. As soon as I got to my

place, I couldn't wait to fuck her and luckily for me she just welcomed my dick without a fight. I'm busy making breakfast for her, I thought I would wake up and find a man next to me. You know ntho TSA busiu(night things) but she's more beautiful than how she looked last night.

"Morning sleepyhead" she yaws then jumps off the bed and starts dressing up in a hurry

"I have to get going papa p is going to kill me" I frown

"Who's that?"

"My pimp" she says looking down

"You are a prostitute?" she buries her face into her hands

"I'm sorry but I swear I'm clean, besides we used condoms" I nod

"How old are you?"

"24" gees she's so young

"Do you want out?" She looks at me and chuckles

"No one can save me Mr"

"Thapelo and I'm not just anyone"

"Yes I want out" I nod

"What's your story?" She sighs closing her eyes

"I'm Makgotso, I'm 24 years old. I am from Soweto, I am a product of rape. My mother hated me so much that she left me with her drunkard uncle at the age of four. Luckily my uncle's wife was a good woman who raised me until I was sixteen, she took me to school and provided for until she passed away that's when my

uncle sold me to bra p, he owns a tarvern slash brothel and I've been working for him since then. I was able to finish my matric but everytime I try to run away he finds me. He's known all over Soweto and Joburg. Two of those guys from yesterday are his sons. They steal cars for him as well" I nod

"Give me as much information as you can about him and I'll pay him a visit, you can stay here in the meantime" she opens her beautiful glossy eyes

"Thank you Thapelo I'll get a job and pay back your kindness"

"You can pay me back by being my girlfriend" she frowns

"I won't be leaving one bad situation for another. I know I'm damaged goods, it's only a matter of time before you start calling me a hoe and a slut because I'm a prostitute"

"Have you heard of Bree Moletsane?" She rolls her eyes

"Who hasn't, she's the author of Trafficked also known as Mrs Shadow

"She's married to my brother, I'm Thapelo Moletsane. I'm telling you this because Bree was also a prostitute and now she's a wife and a mother. There's nothing such as damaged goods. When I saw you last night, I knew it was an ambush but I was intrigued. Let me love you and show you

the good side of men. Bree is also a psychologist I'll speak to her to give you counselling" she breaks into a sob and I hug her

"Everything is going to be alright"

\*

It's our last day today I miss sleeping next to my husband. I can't wait to leave, although I'm going to miss Musa but I need my husband's pipe so badly

"Musa is sulking, she doesn't want me to leave" Stan says throwing himself on the bed as I'm busy packing

"Stay a day or two, the kids and I will leave because they have school and

Bree's award ceremony. I understand why she's clingy pregnancy is like that" I really do

"I wish I could stay but Shadow is leaving for America. He needs me in Joburg to handle some business and besides my pushers will take advantage if they don't see me in a long time" I nod.

We bid farewell to everyone and promise to visit again soon, Musa is really sad shame

"Why don't you come visit us in Jozi" she shakes her head

"And leave mama alone with the kids?" I sigh

"I'll be fine Nosi besides Zolani promised to come month end" I smile

"That's good" we hug and drive off.

"Baby don't you think Musa should move to Jozi?" He chuckles

"I mean you see her one weekend a month, it must be hard"

"It has been like that for close to a decade and the four years we've been married you never complained" I scoff

"That's because she's pregnant now, I just feel sorry for her, I know how you want your man next to you for those nights you feel horny" he sighs

"She can't come to Jozi, as much as you like each other now there will come a time when you will be at eachother's throats. I love this arrangement, I'll speak to shadow so that I can at least come every fortnight" that's better than nothing I guess

"You and your big heart" he says kissing my hand.

\*\*\*\*\*\*BOITUMELO\*\*\*\*\*

We are in Pretoria Bree is not only nominated but she won the award, I'm so proud of my sister, I still can't believe how far we've come. My husband walks in wearing a tailored suit, he looks

handsome as ever, Mme Lihle will be staying with Jr. I'm wearing a long mermaid blue dress and black wedge heel.

"You look beautiful baby" he kisses me

"Ma, if you need anything don't hesitate to contact us please" she smiles

"Go before Jr wakes up" I hug her and we leave.

## \*Menlyn boutique hotel\*

"And the award goes to Bree Moletsane for her outstanding work in the fight against human trafficking" the crowd claps and I'm all smiles

"I wasn't expecting to win so thank you so much. I want to give you as much information about human trafficking as

possible so that you can recognise a person in distress

human trafficking is often a crime that is hidden in plain sight, it is important to be aware of its warning signs. Some indications that a person may be a victim of human trafficking include (especially in the case of women and children):

Appearing malnourished
Showing signs of physical injuries and abuse

Avoiding eye contact, social interaction, and authority figures/law enforcement Seeming to adhere to scripted or rehearsed responses in social Interaction ackfficial identification documentsAppearing destitute/lacking personal possessions

Working excessively long hours

Living at place of employment

Checking into hotels/motels with older males, and referring to those males as boyfriend or "daddy," which is often street slang for pimp

Poor physical or dental health

Tattoos/ branding on the neck and/or lower back

Untreated sexually transmitted diseases

Small children serving in a family restaurant and the list goes on and on

with human trafficking for sexual exploitation purposes, there are many types of trafficking for forced labor. Most forms of forced labor involve a type of initial recruitment of the victim. This is usually under the pretext of a better job abroad for a higher fee. In cases where the victim is forced to work in legal employment, the employer, who is generally unaware that they are

employing trafficked persons, can pay to the bank accounts of traffickers or victims.

Obliged parties, especially financial institutions, should carefully monitor the transactions that individuals working in various jobs transfer to a single person's account or when this amount is withdrawn or paid to a single person's account.

We can do better as a country to stop human trafficking if we learn about how it works and what dangers to look out for. It could be a simple ubduction, looking for a job in the CBD which is a hot spot for human trafficking or sometimes it's the person you trust like in my case. Do research and avoid hotspot areas. If it's too good to be true then it probably is" they clap hands for her as she gets off the stage

"That was wonderful I say hugging her"
Thapelo walks to towards us and I get a
gut wrenching feeling right at the pit of
my stomach

"Bree, we need to leave" Thapelo and Sgora's eyes are blood shot red

"Kopano's private jet was shot while on his way to the us. It exploded mid air. I'm sorry Bree but my brother is gone, he's dead" Bree breaks into a loud sob as they hurry her out of the hotel. God why?

\*CHAPTER 45\*

\*\*\*\*\*\*BOITUMELO\*\*\*\*\*

She's been sleeping on my lap since we got to her house. I feel like I failed my sister, what is the use of having this gift if I can't help my own family. I should have seen this coming, her sniffs are breaking my heart.

"When I was in Mexico I never blamed God. I tried my best to survive and not feel sorry for myself. Then I came back home only to find my husband married to another woman who happens to be my best friend and the sole reason why I was selling my body in another country. I never said anything nor did I blame God, just as I was enjoying the warmth of my father, God decided to take him away and still I said nothing, I was kidnapped again and I lost Kgatli's father but I kept to

myself but now God decided to take my very soul. My very soul Tumi." She says breaking down.

"How do I go on? Where do I start? This man is my life" I cry along with her because I don't know what else to do.

Thapelo walks in looking shattered

"I got a call from the forensic team, they took DNA samples of where the pieces of

the plane crashed and Kopano's DNA was found." Bree wails louder

"I'm so sorry Bree, if I could trade places with him I would, I know how much he loved you"

"Didn't your God warn you this time? You go around helping people but what about your own sister? Tumi make the pain go away it's too much to bare please make it stop". I hold her tightly crying.

"Kopano!" She screams like a mad

"Tumi!" I hear my husband's voice

"Baby wake up, you are crying in your sleep" I sit up like as fast as the speed of light, he has a cup of tea in his hand.

"Baby are you okay?" I look at my husband.

"It was a dream?" He nods

"Kopano is alive?"

"The last time I checked?"

"Did we go to the award ceremony?" He shakes his head

"Baby the award ceremony is tomorrow, remember?"

"Meaning Kopano hasn't left yet?" He looks at me confused. I grab my phone making a call to Bree.

\*Phone convo\*

"Tumi" she sounds a bit out of breath

"How are you?" I close my eyes and remember the pain in her eyes

"Kopano is leaving for America tonight so he's giving me my food before he leaves" she says giggling "Please tell Kopano not to leave, put me on speaker. I had a premonition, the jet he got on was shot down and blew into pieces mid air" there's a bit of silence

"Thanks Tumi, I will cancel my entire trip.
Thank you so much" that's Kopano's voice.

"I love you guys keep safe and kiss my kids for me"

"We love you too sis and goodnight" I sigh

"I'm so glad you advised me to take a nap" I say hugging my husband

"It's hard watching you cry but I'm also happy you get to heal and save people" he says holding me tightly

"I know but I'm happy to have you by my side through it all"

"I love you mamfundisi"

"I love you too pastor Tokelo"

After Tumi's call I got up leaving Kopano in bed and went to the bathroom to cry my eyes out. I feel Kopano's strong hands hug me from behind

"I just got scared you know, what if Tumi didn't have this gift and you boarded the plane?" He sighs

"I can handle anything except losing you Moletsane. It would kill me, I'm not that strong"

"I'm sorry I put my work first, that will never happen again. I don't want to lose you too" he kisses the back of my neck

"It's always been you Bree, from the moment I first saw you when Tshepo

introduced you, it has always been you" I turn and look into his eyes

"It has always been you, from the moment you shook my hand that day looking into my eyes. I have secretly loved you but I took time to admit it to myself.

"Forever?"

"Forever and ever babe"

